

Vol. 2

H.Q-54-27-63-7

H.Q. 34-27-53-7 VOL.2

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE—(ARMY)

CROSS REFERENCE

DISTURBANCES M.D. NO.6
CANADIAN ACTIVE SERVICE
FORCES.

DEAD

DEAD

CENTRAL REGISTRY	P. A. B. F.	DATE	INITIALS	REFERRED TO	FOR REMARKS	INITIALS	DATE
JUL 4 1946	92/46	Ja			(If purpose for which referred cannot be expressed on one line, add minute to file, and enter here "With Minute")	C.R.	3 7/8
AUG 22 1946	218/46	fa			For Requisition C.R. AUG 20 1946		
SEP 18 1946	SEP 17 1946				For Requisition C.R. SEP 17 1946		
APR 76 1952	150452	PA			For Requisition C.R. FEB 12 1952		
APR 20 1953	PA. 18 Apr 53				Request	15 5/8	
This file includes the proceedings of military courts of inquiry and RCMP reports of criminal investigations. It cannot therefore be opened for public access							
Anty Kaplan for Director Directorate of History NDHQ Ottawa 13 Feb 79							

DO NOT WRITE BELOW THIS LINE

H.Q. 54-27-63-7

DEAD

DEAD

VOLUME 3 FOLLOWS

NO FURTHER CORRESPONDENCE TO BE PLACED ON THIS FILE

7¹²/₄₅

and

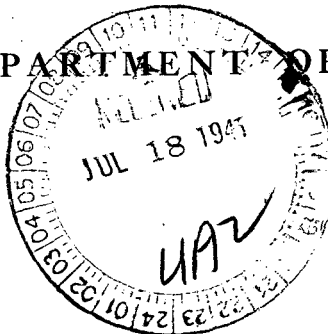
258

DEAD

A



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY



~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ontario.

Court of Inquiry - V-E Day Disturbances
No. 60 C.I.(B) T.C., Yarmouth, N.S.

s.19(1)

Headquarters, M. D. No. 6,
Halifax, N.S., 14 Jul 45.

CENTRAL REGISTRY Army
~~CONF. SEC.~~
54-27-63-7
JUL 17 1945
File _____
Chgd to _____
Referred to _____

Reference your HQ 54-27-63-7 FD 6

(Adm.4(a)2) d/5 July 45.

2. Copy of report of sentences awarded in the Civil Court to personnel involved in the m/n disturbances on V-E Day is forwarded.

3. It will be noted that [redacted] was convicted and awarded six months imprisonment by the Civil authorities and therefore disciplinary action can not be now taken, against him.

GD/jmcg

257
[Signature]
(A. R. Roy) Brigadier,
T / D. C. C., M.D.No.6.

PERSONNEL IN CIVIL CUSTODY

s.19(1)

Regt. No.

Rank - Name

Coy.

A & T
or Reinf.

Date of
Arrest

Charge

Date and
Nature of Sentence

H.Q.

A & T

8 May 45

Theft under value \$25.00

Convicted 2 months
imprisonment 15 May 45

H.Q.

A & T

8 May 45

Theft under value \$25.00

Convicted 2 months
imprisonment 15 May 45

C

Reinf.

11 May 45

Breaking and entering:
theft to the value of
\$25.00 Sec. 460

Convicted 2 months
imprisonment 21 May 45

H.Q.

A & T

12 May 45

Creating a disturbance
and riot

Convicted 6 months
imprisonment 21 May 45

H.Q.

A & T

12 May 45

Retaining under the value
of \$25.00 Sec. 399

Fined \$100.00 and costs
21 May 45

C

Reinf.

12 May 45

Retaining over the value
of \$25.00 Sec. 399

Case Dismissed

D

Reinf.

12 May 45

Retaining under the value
of \$25.00 Sec. 399

Fined \$100.00 and costs
21 May 45.

D

Reinf.

14 May 45

Theft under value of
\$25.00

Fined \$100.00 and costs
21 May 45

D

Reinf.

15 May 45

Breaking and entering:
theft over value \$25.00

Fined \$100.00 and costs
21 May 45.

E

Reinf.

26 May 45

Theft under value \$25.00

Fined \$100.00 and costs
30 May 45

256

MEMORANDUM

TO: DAG(B)

Dept of National Defence (Army)


HQ 54-27-63-7 FD 6 Adm

Ottawa, Ont., 5 Jul 45.

Court of Inquiry - VE Day Disturbances
No 60 CI (B) TC Yarmouth NS

Draft letter to DOC 6 is recommended for signature.

2. In this case a definite attempt to identify service personnel who were involved was made and those service personnel who were identified have been or are being dealt with.


(J.E. MacDermid)
Colonel
D Adm.

JEM/MW

255

HQ 54-27-65-7 FD 6
(Adm.4(a)2)

Army

5 Jul 45

s.19(1)

District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6,
HALIFAX, N.S.

Court of Inquiry - V-E Day Disturbances
No. 60 C.I.(B) T.C. CA. Yarmouth, NS.

Reference HC 120-2-1 (JAG) 20 Jun 45.

2. Although it was stated in this H. 's wire, para 8352, dated 12 May 45, para. 5, that this Court be assembled by you, a Unit Court was convened. It is felt that a District Court of Inquiry in the circumstances would most likely have been more satisfactory.

3. However, this Unit Court has been reviewed, and the following is noted:-

- (a) Around 2200 hrs on 3 May 45 a crowd of about 250 people 3/4 of which were soldiers assembled outside the liquor vendors store on Main St. Yarmouth, and broke into same.
- (b) Damages to the store were caused in an amount of 7.00 and goods to value of \$1,430.90 were removed from the premises by soldiers and civilians.
- (c) Page 6 of the proceedings, R112056 Cpl. Gardiner, R.C.A.F. Police states that a soldier, later identified as [REDACTED] C.I.(B)T.C. Yarmouth NS. incited the rioters by yelling "Come on boys, they're yellow". This soldier then came over to Gardiner and putting up his hands in front of him in a fighting attitude, remarked "Are you taking it up for the Air Force". He then made several thrusts at Gardiner.
- (d) This same soldier, [REDACTED], was seen later kicking one of the Navy Shore Patrol, Patrolman V92450 J.C. Pope, RCHVR. Constable Allen is a witness to this incident.

254

2/

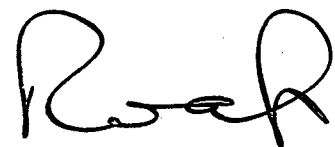
2 - s.19(1)

- (e) A kit bag belonging to [REDACTED] and containing liquor bottles was found on this soldier's bed. The same was turned over to the RCMP.
- (f) [REDACTED] was caught in the vendor's store with bottles in his possession together with [REDACTED]. They were both charged before civil court and sentenced to two months in county gaol.
- (g) 9 military personnel were retained in Yarmouth County gaol following disturbance and charges were laid against them, two were sentenced to two months gaol. It is stated by civil authorities that further charges will be laid. May a complete and up to date report of sentences awarded be forwarded.
- (h) It would seem that although it was known that an attempt might be made to break into the NS liquor store on Main St., same was left unguarded for a time sufficient to enable a few members of the Army to enter same. It is however noted that the Chief of the Yarmouth Police was in charge of the party, whose responsibility it was to ensure safety of the vendor's store.

3. With regard to [REDACTED] it is considered that appropriate disciplinary action should be taken against this soldier under the Army Act for inciting members of the Army and civilians to break into the store, threatening R112056 Cpl. Gardiner of the R.C.A.F. Police and kicking V92450 J. C. Hope. There would seem to be sufficient evidence on hand for this purpose. May outcome of disciplinary action be reported, please.

4. Subject to the above herewith returned, duly approved, one copy of the proceedings of this Court of Inquiry.

253



(A. E. Walford),
Major-General,
Adjutant-General.

Encl. CN/MP

18

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
(ARMY)

CURT OF INQUIRY -

ADMIN REGISTER NO.
.....35,064.....

VE Day Disturbances
No. 60 CI(B)TC CA YARMOUTH NS

H.Q 54-27-63-7. FD. 6. (Adm. 4(a) 2)
OTTAWA, Ont. 27. Jun. 45.....

DATE OF ACCIDENT.....8. May.....19.45.

SOURCE.....

COURT SAT.....15. May.....19.45.

COURT CONVENED.....19..

PROCEEDINGS ENDORSED

PROCEEDINGS SIGNED 17. May. 19.45

BY D.O.C.....20. Jun.....19.45.

PROCEEDINGS
FORWARDED.....19..

PROCEEDINGS RETURNED FOR FURTHER
INFORMATION OR DIRECTION

.....19...

PROCEEDINGS RETURNED
TO N.D.H.Q.....19..

CAUSE OF DELAYS: (In convening:

(In forwarding:

s.19(1)

PRECIS OF EVIDENCE:

In view of the possibility of disturbances arising on VE day O.C. No. 60 CI(B)TC Yarmouth NS states that it had been arranged with Yarmouth Police Dept. that the Camp Military Police would work in conjunction with the town police during the course of the victory day celebration and evening's festivities. In addition, a duty platoon i/c of an officer and Sr.NCO was held in readiness in case of an emergency. At the request of the chief of the Yarmouth Police Dept., two military police and other service personnel, constable of RCMP, accompanied the chief in a police car which patrolled the main st and other areas.

Around 2200 hrs on 8 May 45 a crowd of about 250 consisting of 3/4 soldiers and 1/4 civilians assembled outside the liquor vendor's store on Main St. Yarmouth. The combined patrol arrived on the scene and saw one soldier leaving the place with two bottles of liquor in his hands. They entered and found two soldiers in the rear of the store with bottles hidden in their battle dress. The soldier who came out with two bottles was After this, it became evident that there were too many in the crowd for the Police force to handle and on the advice of the Chief of Police, all service police withdrew to the Police Station. As they were going down the street a few rocks were thrown. On the 9th and 10th May 45 the camp was placed under CB. Around 2300 hrs 8 May 45, the main door of the YMCA was slightly broken into. There however was no other damage.

O.C. REMARKS:

I am of the opinion that a disturbance occurred in the town of Yarmouth the night 8th May during which disturbances the local premises of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission was broken into, and a quantity of liquor was removed from said premises.

I am of the further opinion that Army personnel were involved in the said disturbances. I am further of the opinion that as Civil Court Action has been, and is being, taken against the known Army personnel engaged in this disturbance, that no military action be taken, in view of R.O. 4746.

CN/MP

252 *Campbell*
(C. NOEL) CAPT.,
Adm. 4(a) 2.

18

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
(ARMY)

COURT OF INQUIRY -

ADMIN REGISTER NO
35,064

VE Day Disturbances
No. 60 CI(B)TC CA YARMOUTH NS

54-27-63-7 FD 6 (Adm.4(a)2)
H.Q.

OTTAWA, Ont. 27 Jun 45

DATE OF ACCIDENT..... 8 May 45

SOURCE.....

COURT SAT..... 15 May 45

COURT CONVENED.....19..

PROCEEDINGS ENDORSED 20 Jun 45
BY D.O.C.....19...

PROCEEDINGS SIGNED.....17 May 45
119..

PROCEEDINGS RETURNED FOR FURTHER
INFORMATION OR DIRECTION
.....19...

PROCEEDINGS
FORWARDED.....19..

PROCEEDINGS RETURNED
TO N.D.H.Q.....19..

CAUSE OF DELAYS: (In convening:

(In forwarding:

PRECIS OF EVIDENCE:

In view of the possibility of disturbances arising on VE day O.C. No. 60 CI(B)TC Yarmouth NS states that it had been arranged with Yarmouth Police Dept. that the Camp Military Police would work in conjunction with the town police during the course of the victory day celebration and evening's festivities. In addition, a duty platoon i/c of an officer and Sr.NCO was held in readiness in case of an emergency. At the request of the chief of the Yarmouth Police Dept., two military police and other service personnel, constable of RCMP, accompanied the chief in a police car which patrolled the main st and other areas.

Around 2200 hrs on 8 May 45 a crowd of about 250 consisting of 3/4 soldiers and 1/4 civilians assembled outside the liquor vendor's store on Main St. Yarmouth. The combined patrol arrived on the scene and saw one soldier leaving the place with two bottles of liquor in his hands. They entered and found two soldiers in the rear of the store with bottles hidden in their battle dress. The soldier who came out with two bottles was . After this, it became evident that there were too many in the crowd for the Police force to handle and on the advice of the Chief of Police, all service police withdrew to the Police Station. As they were going down the street a few rocks were thrown. On the 9th and 10th May 45 the camp was placed under CB. Around 2300 hrs 8 May 45, the main door of the YMCA was slightly broken into. There however was no other damage.

O.C. REMARKS:

I am of the opinion that a disturbance occurred in the town of Yarmouth the night 8th May during which disturbances the local premises of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission was broken into, and a quantity of liquor was removed from said premises.

I am of the further opinion that Army personnel were involved in the said disturbances. I am further of the opinion that as Civil Court Action has been, and is being, taken against the known Army personnel engaged in this disturbance, that no military action be taken, in view of R.O. 4746.

CN/MP

251 *Caen Thiel*
(C. NOEL) CAPT.,
Adm.4(a) 2.

IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE No. HC/120-2-1 (JAG)



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

ARMY

Headquarters, M. D. No. 6,
Halifax, N.S., 20 June 45.

CONFIDENTIAL

Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ontario.

Court of Inquiry - V-E Day Disturbances
No. 60 C.I.(B) T.C., C.A. - Yarmouth, N.S.

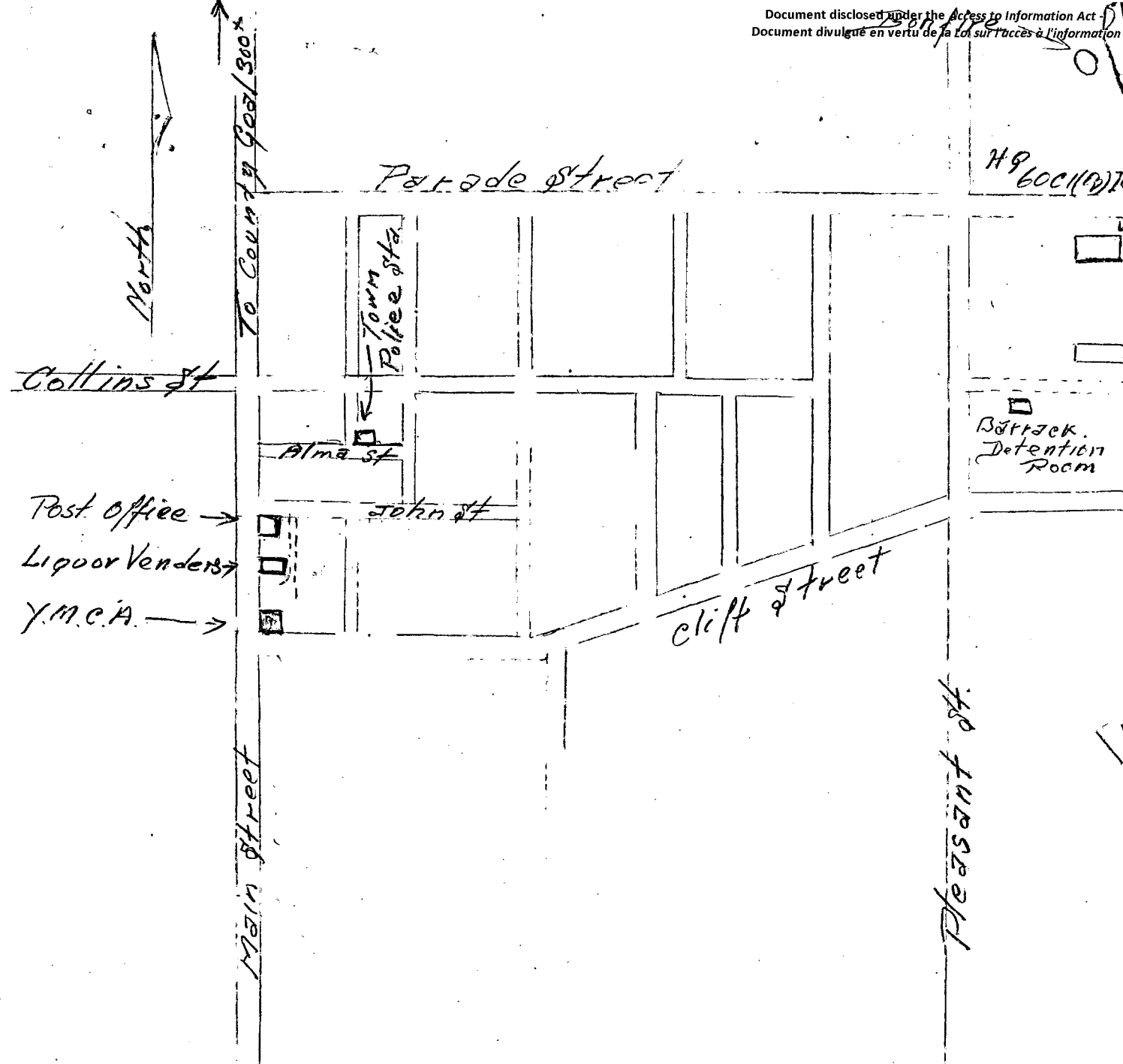
CENTRAL REGISTRY Army	
54-27-63-7	
JUN 22 1945	
File	
Chgd. to	
Referred to	<i>Adm</i>

Proceedings of the m/n Court of Inquiry are forwarded in duplicate. There does not appear to be any further evidence available to be included in the proceedings.

2. There is attached hereto pencil sketch of the locality setting forth the location of the Training Centre and the buildings where disturbances occurred.

NFM/jmcg

(D.A. White)
(D.A. White) Brigadier,
D. O. C., M. D. No. 6.



Note NOT to scale. Approx distance
from H.9. 60 C 1 (B) T.C. to Post Office
1 mile

249

249

*N.B.--As this form is applicable to any Board of Officers or Committee or Court of Inquiry, the blank is to be filled in accordingly.

The signature of each Officer composing the Board, etc., should appear on the last page of this form in the space provided therefor.

PROCEEDINGS of a* Court of Inquiry

assembled at No. 60 C. I. (B) T. C., Yarmouth, N. S.

on the 15 May 1945

by order of Major R. T. Chisholm, E. D.
Officer Commanding, No. 60 C. I. (B) T. C.

for the purpose of inquiring into and reporting upon the circumstances connected with all disturbances of the peace, involving Army personnel in Yarmouth and vicinity, on or about 7 May 45 and subsequent thereto.

PRESIDENT

Major E. I. H. Ings, M.C.
No. 60 C. I. (B) T. C.

MEMBERS

Capt. R. H. Henry
No. 60 C. I. (B) T. C.

Lieut. W. S. K. Jones
No. 60 C. I. (B) T. C.

The Court having assembled pursuant to order, proceed to take evidence.

FIRST WITNESS:

F86813 Cpl. Landry, J. B., having been duly sworn states:

I am Provost Cpl. of the Military Police No. 60 C. I. (B) T. C. On the 8th of May 45, I was warned by Provost Sgt. Lockhart for duty in the Town of Yarmouth with the Yarmouth police, as a patrol to look after the Liquor Vendor's Store, and to work under the Chief of Police. At about 2030 hours in company with Pte. Trefry, M. L. of the Military Police, I reported to the Town police Station. The police chief then took us in his car together with two R. C. M. P. constables, and one R. C. A. F. service police to the liquor Vendor's store on Main Street. We parked outside the Vendors and after we had been there for about half an hour, we saw two soldiers try the door of the Liquor Vendors. The Chief of Police opened the door of the car and called the men over to the car. One came over and the chief said to him, "Are you thirsty?" or words to that effect. The man replied, Oh, we don't want to break in, we can get all the lemon we want.

248

M.F.B. 303

500M-12-42 (7535)
H.Q. 1772-89-133

- PAGE 2 -

FIRST WITNESS
(CONT'D)

There was some further talk which I don't remember, and then the two soldiers walked away down the Street. We stayed in the car outside the Vendors for about another fifteen minutes after this, and then the Police Chief said that he thought he had better see how the bonfire which was to be lit in celebration of V. E. day was getting on. We then drove out Parade Street to where the bonfire was to be lit, just West of the drill hall at 60 C. I. (B) T. C. The bonfire had not yet been lit, so we went a little further out Parade Street, and turned and came back. We came down Parade Street to Main Street, and turned South to the Liquor Vendors. As we approached the Liquor Vendors, I could see quite a crowd of people standing on the sidewalk opposite the Liquor Vendors. I should judge that there were roughly two hundred people in the crowd of which the majority were soldiers. As we arrived almost at the Liquor Vendors I heard the Chief of Police remark, "Well they did break in", or something like that. He pulled over to the curb next the Liquor Vendors. Just then I saw one soldier coming out of the Vendors. He had a bottle in each hand and was holding them up above his shoulders. The Chief of Police said, don't get out yet - have a good look at him first, or words to that effect. I tried to get a good look at the man, but I was on the wrong side of the car to see clearly, and I don't think that I could identify him. When this man had gone, we all jumped out of the car. As we stood on the sidewalk I saw two people inside the Vendors. I said, "Lets go in", and one of the Mounted Police took the lead, and I followed him in. We went back in the store and at the rear where the Office is, we found two soldiers. Both these men I recognized as members of the Staff of 60 C. I. (B) T. C., though I did not know their names. I went into the Office, and took hold of one of the men, and removed from him three pint bottles of Whiskey, which I placed in my battle dress blouse. These were unopened. By this time, Pte. Trefry had come in, and he took charge of the other man. We held them there until instructed by the Police Chief to take them to the rear entrance of the Vendors where an R. C. A. F. jeep was waiting. We got in the jeep and took the men to the County jail, where they were searched. A further quart of liquor was found on the man from whom I had taken the three pint bottles. I do not know if anything was found on the other man. When we got to the County jail the man from whom I took the liquor was identified as [REDACTED], and the soldier with Pte. Trefry was identified as [REDACTED]. I then returned with Pte. Trefry to the Liquor Vendors where I turned over to the Chief of Police the three unopened pint bottles which I still had in my possession. On instructions from the Chief of Police I initialed the three bottles. After this Pte. Trefry and I reported back to the Barrack Detention Room at 60 C. I. (B) T. C., and from then until about 0300 hours on the 9th of May 45, I was employed in patrolling the Streets of the Town. I did not see any further disturbance or have to take any men under arrest.

STATEMENT OF COMMANDING OFFICER

Major R. T. Chisholm, E. D. having been duly sworn, STATES:-

I am Officer Commanding No.60 C.I.(B)T.C. Yarmouth, Nova Scotia.

During the forenoon of the 8th May 45 personnel of No.60 C.I.(B)T.C. took part in an official Civic V-E Day celebration. On return to Camp all personnel under training and all H.W.E. personnel with the exception of those on essential duties were given leave to be absent from quarters and in view of the fact that all stores and places of amusement were closed for the day considerable number of the troops did not proceed much further than the Camp area. Those who did go into the town during the afternoon appeared to content themselves with perambulating up and down the Main Street. Some indulged in singing as they went and with an occasional cheer. During the afternoon I drove through the streets with some of the officers of this unit and found that service men and civilians alike were quite orderly.

As a part of the Victory Day celebration a bonfire and firelight display was arranged by the Civil authorities and this was held on the grounds west of the Drill Hall immediately adjacent to the Camp. This had the effect of drawing off the streets the majority of soldiers and civilians until a fairly late hour when most of the soldiers returned directly to barracks.

The officials in charge of the camp fire consisted of one of the Town policemen and two Town firemen, sworn in as special policemen.

Considering the possibility of disturbances arising on V-E day and in consultation with the Chief of the Yarmouth Police Dept. it had been arranged previously that the Camp Military Police would work in conjunction with the Town Police during the course of the Victory Day celebration and during the evening's festivities. All Regimental Police were ordered, and were on duty. In addition a Duty Platoon i/c of an Officer and Sr. N.C.O. was held in readiness in case of an emergency. At the request of the Chief of the Yarmouth Police Dept. two Military Police and other Service Police, constable of the R.C.M.P. accompanied the Chief in a Police car which patrolled the Main Street and other areas. A foot patrol of two Military Police patrolled the three miles of Main St. and streets adjacent. A 15 cwt truck with driver to be used as a patrol wagon in case of trouble was parked at the Police Station all evening and until a late hour.

Entertainment for the men consisted of sports programme in the afternoon and evening of 8th May, including baseball and softball games, horse shoe pitching, etc. In the evening a dance was held in the Camp Auditorium which was very well attended.

247

.....
(R.T. Chisholm) Major.

- PAGE 3 -

s.19(1)

F1 F WITNESS
(CONT'D)

QUESTION BY THE COURT: Were there many people on the Streets when you first drove with the Chief of Police to the Liquor Vendors?

ANSWER: No, there were few people on the Streets, and everything seemed very quiet.

Q. Of those that were on the Street at that time were they mostly civilians or service men?

A. I believe the people on the Streets at that time were the usual crowd that one sees on any evening, civilians and men from each branch of the services except the Navy. I do not remember seeing any Navy men other than the shore patrol.

Q. When you were first parked outside the Vendors and the Chief of Police called the soldiers over to the car, did you recognize or know the man who came over?

A. No, I did not know him, and I have not seen him since. I doubt if I would be able to recognize him.

Q. Was this man who came over to the car under the influence of liquor in your opinion?

A. No, to me he seemed perfectly sober.

[REDACTED] having been brought before the Court are identified by Cpl. Landry as the two soldiers who were found in the Liquor Vendor's store as described in his evidence above.

QUESTION BY THE COURT: [REDACTED] you have heard the evidence of F86813 Cpl. Landry, J. B., do you wish to ask any questions or cross examine him?

ANSWER: No Sir.

QUESTION BY THE COURT: [REDACTED] you have heard the evidence of F86813, Cpl. Landry, J. B. do you wish to ask any question or to cross examine him?

ANSWER: No Sir.

SECOND WITNESS: F7148 Pte. Trefry, M. L., having been duly sworn states:

I am a member of the Regimental Police stationed at 60 C. I.(B.) T. C. Yarmouth. On the 8th of May 45, I was detailed by Police Sgt. Lockhart for duty in the Town of Yarmouth to safe guard the Liquor Vendor's store. I was to work with Cpl. Landry of our Military police under the orders of the Chief of Police of Yarmouth. At about 2030 hours, I went with Cpl. Landry to the Police station in Yarmouth, and the Police Chief took us in his car to the Liquor Vendor's store on Main Street, Yarmouth.

246
000016

EMMS

- PAGE 4 -

SECOND WITNESS
(CONT'D)

We parked outside the Liquor Vendors and stayed in the Chief's car. At about 2120 hours two men came up to the Vendor's store door and were looking inside. The Chief called them over to the car and talked with them, and then they went away, and approximately 2145 hours we left and went out to the fire works at camp. Upon returning to Town the store was already broken in and one man came out of the door with a quart bottle in each hand. The Chief said not to bother him as we all knew him and we would get the men that were inside. We entered the store. I was behind Cpl. Landry and the Mountie, where we got two men inside. After the Mountie took their names and number, Cpl. Landry and I brought the two men to the County jail. We then reported back and completed Town patrol keeping the Streets clear. While patrolling later, I met the young fellow that came out of the store with the two bottles in his hands. I stopped him and took his name and number, and I found he was [REDACTED]. I remained on patrol until approximately 2359 hours.

QUESTION BY THE COURT: Could you identify the second of the two men that you saw looking into the door of the liquor vendors earlier in the evening?

ANSWER: No.

Q. When you returned the second time to the Liquor Vendors you said you saw a man coming out carrying two quart bottles. Do you know who this man was?

A. I recognize him, and could identify him, but I did not know his name and number at that time.

Q. When you went into the Liquor Vendors you took charge of one of the men found in there? Did you find any liquor in his possession?

A. No Sir.

Q. Do you know the man that you took charge of?

A. Yes, Sir, I know him by his last name. Knew him around the camp.

Q. Who was he?

A. Goodwin.

Q. When you first went to the Liquor Vendors were the Streets very crowded?

A. The first time there was not very many on the Street, and things seemed quite quiet.

275

9 MAR 1

- PAGE 5 -

s.19(1)

SECOND WITNESS
(CONT'D)

- Q. When you returned to the Vendors the second time were there many people about?
- A. There was quite a crowd across the Street from the Vendors.
- Q. About how many would you say?
- A. There were approximately 75 or 100.
- Q. What were they, civilians or service men?
- A. They were mixed, some soldiers and some civilians. About half and half.
- Q. How was this group of people behaving, were they quiet or noisy?
- A. They were not very noisy, just crowded around.
- Q. When you met [REDACTED] later on the Street, did you search him for liquor?
- A. No Sir.
- Q. Why did you not take [REDACTED] into custody?
- A. Well, they said not to take anyone unless we had to because it would only cause more disturbance.
- Q. Who was with you when you met [REDACTED]
- A. L/C Dickson of the Military police.
- Q. Was [REDACTED] sober at that time?
- A. I would not say he was sober. He was walking alright. He had been drinking.
- Q. Could you now identify the man that you first saw looking in the door of the Liquor Vendors and who came over to the car when the Chief of Police called him?
- A. Yes, Sir, I know he was [REDACTED] 244

[REDACTED] having been brought before the Court is identified by Pte. Trefry as the soldier who came over to the Chief of Police car in front of the Liquor Vendors, and who was later seen to leave the Liquor Vendors carrying two bottles of liquor, as described in his evidence above.

QUESTION BY THE COURT: [REDACTED] you have heard the evidence given by Pte. Trefry, do you wish to ask any question, or cross examine him?

ANSWER:

No Sir.

9/2/00

- PAGE 6 -

THIRD WITNESS:

RL12056 Cpl. Gardiner, C. A., having been duly sworn states:

I am Cpl. Gardiner of the R. C. A. F. Police stationed at Yarmouth. On the evening of the 8th of May 45, I was on duty at the Police station in Yarmouth. At about 2130 hours, we received word at the Station that the Provincial Liquor Commission Store on Main Street had been broken into. In company with three other service police of the R. C. A. F. and one member of the naval shore patrol, I went to the Liquor Vendors. As we approached this store walking on the same side of the Street, as the store, we could see a crowd of about 100, of which about one-quarter were civilians, and the rest soldiers. I did not see any personnel of the R. C. A. F. or R. C. N. The soldiers in this crowd were partly on the Street opposite the Vendors, and one man was standing a little in front of the soldiers, and I heard him say, "Come on boys - they're Yellow", or words to that effect. I do not know to whom he referred when he said they were yellow. When we were opposite the shop next the Vendors this soldier who had made the above remark came over to where I was standing and putting up his hands in front of him in a fighting attitude remarked, "Are you taking it up for the Air Force?" I did not reply and he then made several swipes at me, but did not succeed in hitting me. I did not attempt to strike back or close with him as we wished to avoid anything that would possibly start worse trouble. At about this time it became evident that there were too many in the crowd for the Police force to handle, and on the advice of the Chief of Police, we all withdrew to the Police station. As we were going down the Main Street from the Liquor Vendor's some of the crowd followed us and a few rocks were thrown but I do not know that anyone was hit. I did not see any further disturbance that evening, but remained on duty in the Police Station.

QUESTION BY THE COURT:

Did you see this soldier who attempted to strike you, strike, or attempt to strike anybody else?

ANSWER:

Yes, I saw him kick one of the Navy Shore patrol just before he attempted to strike me.

Q.

While you were outside the Vendors, did you see any men going in and out getting liquor?

A.

No Sir.

FOURTH WITNESS:

L33044 Sgt. Lockhart, G. A., having been duly sworn states:

I am Sgt. of the Military police 60 C. I. (B) T. C. On the 8th of May 45, I was asked by the Chief of Police of Yarmouth if I would supply two of my military police to act

000022

CONFIDENTIAL

s.19(1)

- PAGE 7 -

FOURTH WITNESS:
(CONT'D)

as a patrol with a like number from the Town Police, the R. C. A. F. police, R. C. N. Shore patrol, and the R. C. M. P. in case of trouble at the Liquor Vendors. I detailed two men, Cpl. Landry and Pte. Trefry for this duty and instructed them that they would act under the orders of the Chief of Police.

In addition to these two men I had my usual detail of two men in the Town of Yarmouth, patrolling the Streets. The remainder of the Police force, I had been instructed by the R. S. M. to retain in camp in case they should be required.

During the evening, I myself, was making a general patrol of the camp and at about 2200 hours, I received word that the Liquor Vendors had been broken into and that the Adj. Capt. Whitney had telephoned for me to report down there at once. I picked up L/C Forbes at the guard room and with him proceeded directly to the Liquor Vendors. As we went through the Streets, we met four or five soldiers only, and they were proceeding back to camp quietly and not creating any disturbance. The Main Street was practically deserted, and as we reached the Liquor Vendors, the only people I saw was the occasional civilian passing along the Street. I saw no soldiers or other service men. I reported to Capt. Whitney at the Vendors and was told by him that a detail of ten men and a Cpl. were coming down from the duty platoon and that I would station them as a guard on the Vendors. This detail arrived about 2215 hours and I gave the Corporals instructions. In my tour of duty for the night of the 8th-9th May 45, I did not find any disturbance being created by the troops nor any sign of rowdiness or misbehaviour in the lines. My patrol had no disturbances to report with the exception of the breaking into of the Liquor Vendors.

After posting the patrol at the Liquor Vendors, I returned to Camp where I found everything quiet and the men in barracks. Acting on information which I received in camp, I went to Hut No. 12, and made a search of all the bunks. On the bed of [REDACTED] I found a kit bag locked. From the feel of it, I suspected that it contained bottles and, therefore, took it with me to the Barrack Detention room for safe keeping. [REDACTED] was not in barracks at the time. I then telephoned the R. C. M. P. and told them what I had found. Constable Kempton came up to the Guard room at once, and I turned over the kit bag to him. We did not open it, and I do not yet know exactly what it contained.

242

000024



Handwritten signature or initials.

- PAGE 8 -

FOURTH WITNESS:
(CONT'D)

On the 9th and 10th of May when the Camp was placed under C. B. the men accepted this order quite cheerfully and made no demonstration, nor did they cause any trouble.

QUESTION BY THE COURT: [REDACTED] you have heard the evidence, which Sgt. Lockhart has given do you wish to ask any questions or cross examine him?

ANSWER: No Sir.

FIFTH WITNESS: R158115, Cpl. Buie, A. E., having been duly sworn states:

I am Cpl. of the Service police of the R. C. A. F. On the 8th of May at about 2130 hours, I was patrolling the Main Street in Yarmouth in company with Constable Allen of the Yarmouth police force. When we were about a block away from the Liquor Vendors, we heard someone call out that the Liquor Vendors had been broken into. We, therefore, continued along the Street till we came to the Vendors, the door of which we could see had been smashed. There was a crowd on the Street opposite the Vendors, and a few close to the curb on the side of the Vendors store. To the best of my belief this crowd was made up of soldiers, although there may have been some civilians on the farther side of the Street. I did not see any personnel of the R. C. A. F. or Navy. The crowd was milling about and kept repeating, "Chase them away, we are going to go in anyhow", or words to that effect. I did not go into the Liquor store, but as it seemed that the crowd was determined to go into the Vendors, and the police were hopelessly outnumbered, we decided there was nothing we could do to stop the crowd, and we, therefore, retired along Main Street to the police station. As we moved along Main Street part of the crowd followed us, and a few stones were thrown, but I do not think anyone was hit.

241

SIXTH WITNESS: [REDACTED], having been duly sworn states:

I am a member of the Home War Establishment of 60 C. I. (B) T. C., employed as Cook. On the evening of the 8th of May 45, at about 1730 hours, after I had had supper, I went to the Unit Wet Canteen with Pte. McAlpine. I had a few beers, and was joined there by [REDACTED]. I stayed at the Canteen until it closed, and then went down Town with the intention of going to [REDACTED] home. [REDACTED] did not want to go home, and suggested that we go down town so we did. When we got down Town, we found that the Liquor Vendors store was open so we went inside and before we could get out again, the Military Police arrived and took us in charge. I had picked up some liquor, but when I saw the police, I put it down again.

000026

9/10/21

- PAGE 9 -

SIXTH WITNESS:
(CONT'D)

I was taken by the Military Police to the County jail where I was kept until today, the 15th May, when I appeared before Magistrate R. V. Reade, and received a sentence of two months in the County jail, for theft.

QUESTION BY THE COURT: Was there any crowd about the Liquor Vendors when you went in?

ANSWER: No, I think there was one other person in the Vendors, but I did not see him.

Q. Did you see or take part in any disturbance during the evening?

A. I did not see or take part in any disturbance of any kind that evening.

Q. You stated that you had been in the Wet Canteen at 60 C. I. (B) T. C. until it closed. Were you sober at the time you went into the Liquor Vendors?

A. No, I know that if I had been sober, I would not have been so foolish to go into the Vendors.

QUESTION BY THE COURT: [REDACTED] you have heard the evidence of Pte. Goodwin, do you wish to ask him any questions or cross examine him?

ANSWER: No Sir.

SEVENTH WITNESS:

[REDACTED], having been duly sworn states:

I am a member of the H. W. E., 60 C. I. (B) T. C., employed as cook. On the evening of the 8th of May, right after supper, which would be about 1700 hours, I reported over to the kitchen of the Sgts. mess to help in making sandwiches. When I finished that, I went to the Unit Wet Canteen, where I met [REDACTED], and we sat drinking beer until the Canteen closed. We then left the Canteen and went down town where we found the Liquor Vendor's store open. We did not know that the Vendors had been broken into, but just saw it as we came along the Street. There was not a crowd there. I went inside, and I picked up some bottles of liquor and just then the Police came in and found me. They took me in charge and brought me to the County jail where I remained until today, the 15th of May 45, when I was brought before Magistrate R. V. Reade, and received a sentence of two months in the County jail, for theft.

QUESTION BY THE COURT: You stated that you had remained in the Wet Canteen until it closed. Were you sober when you went into the Liquor Vendors?

ANSWER: No, I had taken so much beer that I did not realize what I was doing.

2000

- PAGE 10 -

SEVENTH WITNESS:
(CONT'D)

Q. Did you on this particular evening see or take part in any disturbance?

A. No, Sir, I did not see or take part in any disturbance.

EIGHTH WITNESS: V91432, Patrolman Smith, Kenneth G., having been duly sworn states:

I am Patrolman of the R. C. N. V. R. stationed at Cornwallis, and in Yarmouth on patrol. I was sent from Cornwallis with one other man from Cornwallis to Yarmouth to act as shore patrol. On the 8th of May 45, at about 2115 hours, I had just left the Y. M. C. A. building on Main Street when I heard a noise of breaking glass, and saw a crowd gathered down the Street. I doubled down to where the crowd was, and found that one of the doors into the Liquor Vendor's store had been broken in. I stood in front of the broken door for about ten minutes endeavouring to persuade the crowd to go away. There was a crowd of about 125, made up of soldiers with a few civilians, I would say about 25 young and old around the outskirts of the crowd. They were milling about and there was a great deal of shouting. I could hear the words, "We're dry, we want a drink, come on let's go", being repeated by a number of the crowd. While I was guarding one door, the crowd evidently broke the other one, and got inside the store. By this time other police of the Town had arrived on the scene, and we were all endeavouring to stop the crowd from entering. I did not see any person that I could now identify enter the Liquor store, but I did see one soldier who was taller than the others, and I think I could identify him. This man appeared to be urging some of the others on. As the crowd were now going in and out of the Vendors, and it was obvious we could not stop them, I moved away and continued my patrol down the Main Street. When I returned to the Vendors in about fifteen minutes, the Mounted Police and Town Police had arrived and were guarding the store. I remained on patrol in the vicinity of the Liquor Vendors until about 2300 hours, when I went back to the Yarmouth police station to see if any calls had come in. After I had been at the station about five minutes, a telephone call came in from the Y. M. C. A. on Main Street saying that their door had been broken in. I immediately went to the Liquor Vendors and reported to the Chief of Police and with him went to the Y. M. C. A. We were met by one of the Y. M. C. A. staff who informed us that the door had been broken but that no other damage had been done, and that nothing had been taken from the "Y". It was not reported to me who was responsible for the break.

239

000030

2/4/42

- PAGE 11 -

EIGHTH WITNESS:
(CONT'D)

I remained on patrol until mid-night and there were no further disturbances of any kind.

[REDACTED] having been brought into the room is identified by Patrolman Smith, Kenneth G. V91432, as the tall soldier referred to in his previous evidence. Patrolman Smith further states that this is the tall soldier he saw in the crowd at the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission Store on Main Street, Yarmouth, on the night of the 8th of May 45.

The President of the Court at this stage asks Pte. Gillis if he wishes to cross examine Patrolman Smith, the previous testimony of Patrolman Smith having been read to [REDACTED] declines to question or cross examine Patrolman Smith.

NINTH WITNESS:

V92450, Patrolman, Hope, J. C., R. C. N. V. R., having been duly sworn states:

I am Patrolman in the R. C. N. V. R. stationed at Shelburne and on patrol duty in Yarmouth. At approximately 2115 hours, I left the Y. M. C. A. accompanied by Patrolman Schneider going North. When I arrived a short distance from the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission store, a soldier grabbed my arm, and said, "Come on back with me". I replied "No", and continued on my way to the Police Station. A block from the Liquor Commission this same soldier gave me a kick in the back, but I paid no attention to him, and kept on going. I did, however, turn around and took a good look at him in order to assure future recognition. The soldier who is present in this room is one and the same, as he who grabbed my arm and kicked me. At this stage, the witness points to Pte. Gillis. 238

QUESTION BY PTE. GILLIS: At the time you were grabbed by the arm, you say I was alone, or were there others around?

ANSWER: There were others around.

Q. At the time you say I kicked you, were there others around as well?

A. Yes.

TENTH WITNESS:

[REDACTED], having been duly sworn states:

I am a soldier of the Canadian Army undergoing basic training at 60 C. I. (B) T. C., and am in No. 12 Platoon "C" Company. On the 8th of May 45, after supper at about 1800 hours, I went down Town with my chum, [REDACTED] We went

000032

2000

- PAGE 12 -

TENTH WITNESS:
(CONT'D)

s.19(1)

to the South end of Town where I bought a bottle of lemon extract, which we drank. We then went to the Y. M. C. A. on Main Street, and while there I heard some of the boys say that the Liquor Store would be broken into, but there was no liquor. My chum and I went down to the Vendors and looked in the windows out of curiosity. While we were there lights from a car parked by the sidewalk were turned on us and someone called us over to the car. I went over and found the Chief of Police, and talked with him. The Chief of Police asked my name, and where I came from, and he told me that there was no liquor in the Vendors. My chum and I then went on down Street, and when we had gone about a block we heard the sound of the crowd of people, and looking back saw them gathered around the Vendors. I left my chum and ran back to the Vendors and stood by the window near the entrance to the South door. Someone put his foot through the glass of the door and then someone else battered the door in. I, myself did not take any part in breaking in the door. After a moment or two the crowd surged in to the Liquor Vendors, and took me along with it. I went back in the store, and gathered up some bottles of hard liquor, which I put on the counter near the front door. Just then I saw that the Police had come back so I took a quart bottle in each hand, and went out. The Police did not stop me, and I went down the Street to the lane back of the Post Office, where I met my chum, and told him that I knew where some soldiers had cached some liquor. We went to the cache, and got the bottles, which we took back to barracks and hid in a nearby field. After we had hidden the bottles, we went back down Town, and I was met by one of the Military Police who took my name and number. Shortly after this it began to rain and we returned to barracks. I will be 19 years of age in August, and perhaps on account of my age, the lemon extract, which I drank, affected me a great deal and at the time of being in the Liquor store, I was not sober.

237

QUESTION BY THE COURT: Had you any part, or did you know anything of the breaking in of the North door of the Liquor store?

ANSWER: No, I did not even know the North door had been broken.

QUESTION BY THE COURT: [REDACTED] you have heard the evidence given by [REDACTED], do you wish to ask any question or cross examine him?

ANSWER: No Sir.

2001

- PAGE 13 -

ELEVENTH WITNESS:

[REDACTED] having been
duly sworn states:

I am a soldier of the Canadian Army, No. 12 Platoon "C" Company 60 C. I. (B) T. C. undergoing basic training. On the 8th of May 45, at approximately 1830 hours, I went with my chum [REDACTED] to Town. We went to the South end of Town where we purchased a bottle of lemon extract, which we drank. I did not drink much because I found it made me sick. We then wandered around Town for a time, and were in the restaurants and then went out Parade Street to where the bonfire was being lit, just west of the drill hall at 60 C. I. (B) T. C. Later, we came back to Town and at this time, I heard some people say that there was no liquor in the Vendors store, and I told [REDACTED] to come down and I would show him. We went to the Vendors and looked in the windows in the door. Then someone in a car parked outside the Vendors called us over. We went over, but [REDACTED] did all the talking to the Mounted Police who were in the car. We then walked down the Street for a piece, and were coming back when we saw a crowd gathered around the Liquor Vendors. [REDACTED] ran in to the crowd, and I did not see him again for about half an hour. I, myself, stood on the Street at the Post Office corner and saw a number of people walking away with bottles of liquor and some cases. We went up a side Street, and where some bushes were growing we found a cache of liquor, which we picked up and took back to camp and hid in a field. We then came back down Town, but as it began to rain, we went back to camp again.

s.19(1)

QUESTION BY THE COURT:

[REDACTED], you have heard the evidence given by [REDACTED], do you wish to ask him any questions or cross examine him?

ANSWER:

No Sir.

236

TWELFTH WITNESS:

[REDACTED] having been
duly sworn states:

I am a soldier of the Canadian Army in No. 16 Platoon "D" Company 60 C. I. (B) T. C. undergoing basic training. On the 8th of May 45, after supper, I went with my chum Pte. Booth down Town to the Y. M. C. A. on Main Street where we played a few games of cribbage. When we left the "Y", we walked down the Street, and saw quite a crowd gathered together. They were talking about the Liquor Vendors and someone mentioned that there was no liquor in the store. We met a man of the R. C. A. F. who had evidently been drinking, and who was urging the crowd around to go down to the Liquor store. He was saying, "Come, let's go down to the Liquor Vendors, we want booze", or words to that effect. I do not know this man, but I think I would be able to recognize him again. Then the crowd moved down to the Liquor store led by this man of the R. C. A. F.

000036

5/11/11

- PAGE 14 -

TWELFTH WITNESS:
(CONT'D)

s.19(1)

I went along with them and when the store was broken into I went into the store and took two quart bottles of whiskey. I then went back to a field near camp where with some of my chums, I drank one of the bottles. I hid the other bottle and went back to barracks.

THIRTEENTH WITNESS:

s.19(1)

[REDACTED] having been
duly sworn states:

I am a member of the H. W. E. 60 C. I. (B) T. C., employed as cook. On the 8th of May 45, at about 1915 hours, I went to the Unit Wet Canteen where I had three or four bottles of beer. I then went over to where the Town authorities had a bonfire made, just west of the drill hall of 60 C. I. (B) T. C. I watched that for a short time, and then decided to go down Town. I went down and when I got to the Gateway Restaurant on Main Street, I met Pte. Hall, and he and I had some conversation with two Air force men one of whom was a service policeman. There was quite a crowd of people there and I saw one car filled with civilians from the South end that seemed to be urging the soldiers on to break into the Liquor store. About this time somebody had broken in the doors of the Liquor store, but I myself, did not go in, but I was across on that side of the Street. I do not remember why, but it seems that we got into an argument with some of the police and we chased them down the Street as far as the Ross Drug store on the corner of Main and John Streets. We stopped chasing them there, and I then returned to barracks and went to the "C" and "D" cook house where I talked for a time with the cooks who were making coffee for the dance at the camp Y. M. C. A. I then went over to the dance where I stayed for about 15 minutes. At about 2230 hours in company with Pte. Forbes, I went down Town just to see what was going on. We did not see any disturbance of any kind nor get into any trouble, but returned to camp at approximately 2300 hours. We looked in at the dance at the Y. M. C. A. again, and I left Pte. Forbes there and went to my barracks and to bed. 235

I do not remember and I do not believe that I struck or attempted to strike anyone during the evening nor to engage in a fight of any kind.

QUESTION BY THE COURT: Could you identify any of the people in the car you mention?

ANSWER: No, I did not know them or the car.

Q. How do you know they were from the South end?

A. It came from that direction.

2011

- PAGE 15 -

FOURTEENTH WITNESS:

F32792, Pte. Hall, I. G., having been
duly sworn states:

s.19(1)

I am a member of the H. W. E. 60
C. I. (B) T. C. After supper on the evening
of the 8th of May 45, I went down Town to
Milton at the North end of Yarmouth to visit
some friends. At this friend's house, I had
two or three drinks of wine and whiskey. I
then went down Town to Veinot's Pool Room,
and played a few games of pool. After that
I crossed over to the Y. M. C. A. on Main
Street where I wrote two or three letters.
I left the "Y" about 1930 hours and noticed
that there was quite a crowd of soldiers and
civilians on Main Street in the block between
Cliff Street and John Street. They were
moving about and several civilians asked me
to help them in breaking into the Liquor
Vendors. I cannot identify these people as
I did not know them, but one of them was a
young darkie wearing army battle dress pants
and army ankle boots. I did not pay any
attention to them, but told them I was not
interested; they could do it themselves. I
left the crowd and went North on Main Street,
but returned to the Gateway Restaurant about
2130 hours. When I got to the Gateway
Restaurant I saw that the crowd were milling
around in front of the liquor Vendors and
shortly after that the doors were broken into.
I met [redacted] when I arrived at the
Gateway Restaurant, but after the doors of
the Vendors were broken in I lost sight of
him. I, myself, did not go near the Vendors,
but I crossed over to that side of the Street
and went North on Main Street, to the corner
of Main and Collins. As I reached that
corner I was overtaken by three soldiers who
were carrying liquor and who handed me three
quart bottles. I had been drinking earlier
in the evening or I do not think I would have
accepted this liquor, but I did, and brought
it back to barracks. At the barracks I put
it in my kit bag, which I locked and left on
my bed. A little later, I returned to Town
and walked up and down the Streets, but I
did not see or take part in any disturbance.
I returned to camp about 2345 hours, and
went to bed.

234

The next morning the 9th of May 45, I saw
that my kit bag had gone, and some of the boys
in the barracks told me that I had put liquor
in it, and that the military police had taken
it. I went to see Sgt. Lockhart of the
Military police, and he told me that the kit
bag, unopened, had been turned over to the
R. C. M. P.

Handwritten signature

- PAGE 16 -

FIFTEENTH WITNESS:

CHIEF OF POLICE HOPKINS, H. L., having been duly sworn states:

s.19(1)

On the 8th of May 45, I asked Sgt. Lockhart of the Military Police 60 C. I. (B) T. C. to let me have as many of his men as he could spare on duty in the Town of Yarmouth during the evening. He said he would send as many men down as he could, and two men, Cpl. Landry and Pte. Rafuse reported to me that evening at about 2000 hours. In addition to these two men, I had two constables of the R. C. M. P., four shore patrol from the R. C. N., and three service police from the R. C. A. F. I divided these men into pairs and we patrolled the Streets of Yarmouth until about 2030 hours. At that time the Streets were very quiet with hardly any civilians or service men about. At about 2030 hours, I got my car at the police station, and took with me two of the Military Police and two R. C. M. P. constables, we drove to the Liquor Vendors and parked just outside it. After a little while two soldiers stopped at the Vendors and were looking in the door windows. I called them over to my car and spoke to one of them. He was telling me how much lemon he had drunk and that he wanted some more liquor, but I pointed out to him that breaking into the Vendors would be a very foolish way to get it. The two soldiers then went off down the Street. There were so few on the Street, and everything was so quiet that I thought we would move around in the car and make sure that crowds were not gathering elsewhere. We took a turn around the block and then proceeded out on Parade Street to the Training Centre where a bonfire had been prepared.

233

I had on duty at the bonfire one traffic officer of my own force, and two or three of the fire department to assist him. Everything was quiet there, and we proceeded further East on Parade Street turning back just beyond the Indian Reservation. We then came down Town to Main Street and along Main to the Liquor Vendors. As we approached the Vendors store, I could see quite a crowd mostly of civilians by the side of the Street opposite the vendors. I should judge that there were about half a dozen or eight soldiers on the sidewalk in front of the vendors. This group of soldiers immediately broke up and went away as we approached. As we drew up outside the Vendors, I could see that both doors had been broken in and just at that moment the soldier whom I recognized as the soldier whom I had called across to my car earlier in the evening came out of the Vendors carrying a bottle in each hand. We did not attempt to catch him as I felt that we could get him later. We went into the Vendors and there I found two men later identified as [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] These men were taken in charge and a call sent to the Police Station and the R. C. M. P. Headquarters for additional help. Within a few minutes Inspector McIntosh and four or five R. C. M. P. arrived, and also several of the R. C. A. F. service police and R. C. N. shore patrol.

000042

SNAD

- PAGE 17 -

FIFTEENTH WITNESS:
(CONT'D)

Shortly after this, Capt. Whitney, Adjutant 60 C. I. (B) T. C. arrived and told me that he had ordered a picket of one N. C. O. and ten men to report to the Liquor Vendors as soon as possible. Within a few minutes this picket arrived and went on duty. In addition to this picket, Inspector McIntosh left two R. C. M. P. Constables on duty at the Vendors, and I myself was on duty in the Town until about 0300 hours the next morning the 9th of May 45.

s.19(1)

During the balance of the evening and early morning there were no further disturbances of any description. While I was at the Vendors Patrolman Smith came in and told me that a door in the Y. M. C. A. on Main Street had been broken. I proceeded with him at once, and met a member of the Y. M. C. A. Staff at the Y. M. C. A. building who told me that the door had been damaged, but that nothing had been removed from the premises or further harm done.

Since the 8th of May 45, the under listed soldiers have been called in for questioning and have been retained in the Yarmouth County Jail with charges laid against them.

✓
✓
✓
✓
✓
✓
✓
✓
The undermentioned:

and
were
convicted on 15 May 45 on a charge of theft under the value of \$ 25.00 from the store of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission in Yarmouth, and are at present undergoing a sentence of two months imprisonment in the Yarmouth County Jail.

The matter is still under investigation and further charges may be laid.

SIXTEENTH WITNESS:

CONSTABLE ALLEN, S., having been duly sworn states:

I am Police Constable of the Yarmouth Police force.

On the 8th of May 45, I went on duty at approximately 1830 hours. I had orders to patrol the Streets of Town and had with me Cpl. Buie of the special Police R. C. A. F. We patrolled the Streets together and found them quiet with no sign of any disturbances. At about 1900 hours we saw quite a crowd of soldiers with possibly a few civilians among them on the side of the Street opposite the Liquor Vendors. We continued our patrolling and had reached a point on Main Street at the corner of Alma when a member of the R. C. A. F

000044

SECRET

- PAGE 18 -

SIXTEENTH WITNESS:
(CONT'D)

s.19(1)

came along and told us that the Liquor Vendors had been broken into. We went up the Street to the Vendors at once. There was quite a crowd gathered around and I could see that the South door of the Vendors had been broken in and that two or three men were inside. I also saw two members of the Naval Shore patrol and two of our own men attempting to guard this door and keep everyone out. I could see that the police were hopelessly outnumbered and I, therefore, called my men and the shore patrol to come away. As we withdrew we were followed by a portion of the crowd, and I saw one of the naval patrol kicked by a soldier whose name I did not know, but that I can recognize and identify. I also saw one of the special police R. C. A. F. who had been struck in the mouth but I did not see what or who struck him.

The crowd followed us along Main Street to Alma Street and quite a few rocks were thrown though I do not know that anyone was struck by them.

Later in the evening I returned to the Liquor Vendors on call from the Chief of Police and remained on patrol duty until about 0600 hours on the morning of the 9th of May 45. During the remainder of my patrol I did not see anything on the Streets in the nature of a disturbance.

QUESTION BY THE COURT: On going to the Liquor store when you heard that it had been broken into, how was the crowd you saw made up, Army or civilians?

ANSWER:

All that I could see were soldiers, but there may have been civilians on the other side of the Street.

[REDACTED] No. 60 C. I. (B) T. C. having been brought into the room is identified by Constable Allen as the man who kicked a member of the shore patrol, as mentioned in the evidence above.

231

The President of the Court at this stage asks [REDACTED] if he wishes to cross examine Constable Allen, the previous testimony of Constable Allen having been read to [REDACTED] [REDACTED] declines to question or cross examine Constable Allen.

SEVENTEENTH WITNESS: F76231, Cpl. Wisener, E. G. having been duly sworn states:

I am Platoon Cpl. No. 1 Platoon "A" Coy. 60 C. I. (B) T. C. On May 8 45 No. 1 Platoon was duty Platoon and I was, therefore, on duty with my Platoon in camp.

At about 2130 hours I received instructions to report with ten men of my Platoon to the Liquor Vendor's Store on Main Street. The party was taken by truck to the Vendors where I received instructions from Police Sgt. Lockhart.

000046

over

- PAGE 19 -

SEVENTEENTH WITNESS:
(CONT'D)

I posted my men, five outside the building and the others inside. Occasionally I sent two men to patrol around the block to be sure that no crowd was gathering. I arranged for a relief for my party at 0300 hours on 9 May 45.

During our tour of duty there was no sign of a noise or disturbance of any kind.

EIGHTEENTH WITNESS:

MR. A. R. HOPKINS, having been duly sworn states:

I am the Manager of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission store at Yarmouth. Previous to V. E. Day 8 May 45, I had discussed with Inspector MacIntosh of the R. C. M. P. the question of precaution to be taken to safeguard the Liquor Store on V. E. Day. As the troops in this area have always behaved in an orderly manner, I personally did not consider that any trouble would arise.

On the evening of 8 May 45 at about 2200 hours, I received a call at my house that the store had been broken into. I went down Town at once and found that both doors had been broken in and a quantity of stock had been removed. I called carpenters to make temporary repairs and they later gave me an estimate of complete repairs at roughly \$ 75.00.

On the afternoon of 9 May 45 stock was taken and it was found that stock to the value of \$ 1430.90 had been removed or broken.

There were no further disturbances or attempts to break into the store.

230

CAPT. H. C. WHITNEY, who on the 8th of May 45 was Adjutant 60 C. I. (B) T. C., having been transferred to N. D. H. Q. Ottawa, Ont. is not available to give evidence before the court.

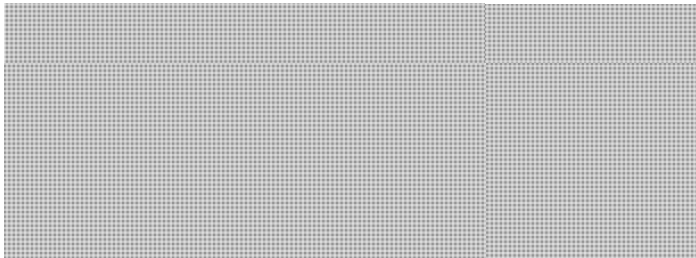
[Handwritten signature]

2014

- PAGE 20 -

The Court having considered the evidence has to report:

- (a) That on 8 May 45 at approximately 2200 hours a crowd of people gathered on the Main Street of Yarmouth, N. S. outside the store of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission. That a person or persons of this crowd broke open the two doors of the Liquor Commission store causing damage to the amount of about \$ 75.00, and removed from the store goods to the value of \$ 1430.90.
- (b) That the underlisted military personnel of 60 C. I. (B) T. C. are charged with offences arising out of this disturbance and are at present in the custody of the civil authorities in the Yarmouth County jail, awaiting trial.



The underlisted military personnel were on 15th May 45 convicted of theft of goods under the value of \$ 25.00 from the store of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission and are at present serving sentences of two months imprisonment in the Yarmouth County jail.

F-66176, Pte. Goodwin, E. C.
F-51373, Pte. McKinnon, D. A.

- (c) That the Yarmouth Town police were reinforced on 8 May 45 by four naval shore patrol; two military police and three R. C. A. F. service police. These police, acting under order of the Yarmouth Chief of Police, patrolled the Streets in pairs and also joined a patrol squad in the police car. At 60 C. I. (B) T. C. the Duty Platoon was held in readiness to move by truck to any point in Yarmouth and vicinity should they be required.
- (d) That Police, as shown in (c) above, proceeded to the Liquor Commission store at the first alarm and endeavoured to persuade the crowd to disperse and to NOT enter the store and cause any further damage. That the police agreed they were too small a force to deal with the crowd and, therefore, withdrew. That a picket of ten men under an N. C. O. was supplied by 60 C. I. (B) T. C. when asked for, to guard the Liquor Commission store.

229

FINDING IF REQUIRED:—

- PAGE 21 -

- (e) That no disciplinary action by the Military authorities is required, as the Civil authorities have laid charges against Military personnel as shown in (b) above and are still investigating the matter.

Signed at

Ernest H. Major
(Signature)

PRESIDENT

Yarmouth, N.S.

No. 60 C. I. (B) T. C.
(Unit)

this 17th day of

Robert H. Major
(Signature)

May 1945

No. 60 C. I. (B) T. C.
(Unit)

MEMBERS

W. S. Jones
(Signature)

No. 60 C. I. (B) T. C.
(Unit)

Opinion of
Commanding
Officer:—

I am of the opinion that a disturbance occurred in the town of Yarmouth the night 8th May during which disturbances the local premises of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission was broken into, and a quantity of liquor was removed from said premises.

I am of the further opinion that Army personnel were involved in the said disturbances. I am further of the opinion that as Civil Court Action has been, and is being, taken against the known Army personnel engaged in this disturbance, that no military action be taken, in view of R.O. 4746.

FORWARDED.

APPROVED

Halifax, N.S.
20 June 1945.

(D.A. White)
(D.A. White) Brigadier,
District Officer Commanding,
1945 Stary District No. 6.

JUN 27 1945

OTTAWA, ONT. MAJOR-GENERAL
Date.....ADJUTANT-GENERAL

228

000052

FALSE DOCKET

H.Q. 54-27-63-7.

FALSE DOCKET

No. 5

35 917

M.F.B. 387a
450M-11-44 (5891-5948)
H.Q. 1772-39-485

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE, OTTAWA

CROSS REFERENCE

Disturbances M.d. No. 6

C.A.S.T.

OK

CENTRAL REGISTRY	P. A. OR B. F.	DATE	INITIALS	REFERRED TO	FOR REMARKS	INITIALS	DATE
(If purpose for which referred cannot be expressed on one line, add minute to file and enter here "With Minute")							
				Adm.	With Papers C.R. JUN 23 1945		
				DAG(B)	Memo + letter plb letter 5 Jul 45		
				D Adm	Reid / in dispatch Post 6 Jul 45		
				HAH	memo plse on 3/12/45		
				Cir	Admin		2-8-48
				admin	Per Regulation C.R. AUG 13 1945		
				J.A.S.			27/9
				Adm	Memo		1 Oct
					C.R. NOV		
							227

000053



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY.

CONFIDENTIAL

Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ontario.

V-E DAY DISTURBANCES
A-14 CITC - KENTVILLE, N.S.

Headquarters, M. D. No. 6,
Halifax, N. S., 13 Nov 45.

Central Registry

NATIONAL DEFENCE

NOV 15 1945

Shipped.....

Forwarded to.....

Reference your HQ 54-27-63-7 FD 5 (Adm 4) d/24

Oct 1945.

2. It is noted in the finding by the Court of Inquiry into this disturbance at para 3 that the disturbances and theft were participated in by service personnel and civilians. Under the circumstances although there is no definite evidence in the proceedings that service personnel were actually involved in committing the damage, nevertheless, it is felt that since there is evidence to the effect that service personnel were present there is some responsibility on the part of the Department of National Defence.

3. Under P.C. Order 5688 it is understood that claims for damage are being paid in the City of Halifax, it is thought advisable that steps be taken to award compensation for the damages claimed at Kentville and it is recommended that steps be so taken.

J. C. Stewart
R.W.
(J.C. Stewart) Brigadier,
D. O. C., M. D. No. 6.

226

HQ 54-27-63-7 FD 5 (Adm 4)

24 Oct 45.

District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6,
HALIFAX, NS.

V-E DAY DISTURBANCES
A-14 CIPC

Reference your H 120-2-1 (JAG) dated

19 Aug 45.

2. The claim of Dr. R.B. Mulloney has been referred to the Legal Adviser of the Department for an opinion as to the Crown's liability.

3. Advice has now been received that PC 5688 dated 21 Aug 45 deals with damages occurring in Halifax as a result of disturbances on V-E Day. This Order-in-Council will not extend to the damages in Kentville or Yarmouth arising from disturbances on V-E Day or V-J Day.

4. If it is desired to award compensation for these damages, it will be necessary to place submission for payment before the Privy Council.

5. It is requested that you give this matter consideration and that your recommendations in this regard be received, please.

YB/UP

(A. E. Walford),
Major-General,
Adjutant-General.

225
/



In reply quote No. HJ 54-27-63-7 (JAG/0-3)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY
INTER-OFFICE CORRESPONDENCE

OTTAWA, 1 Oct 45.

TO: Admin

Re V-E Day and V-J Day Disturbances
M. D. 6 Halifax

Reference your memo of 27 Sep one folio down.

2. P. C. 5688 dated 21 Aug 45 deals with damages occurring in Halifax as a result of disturbances on V-E Day. This Order-in-Council would not extend to the damages in Kentville or Yarmouth arising from disturbances on V-E Day or V-J Day.

3. If it is desired to award compensation for these damages it would be necessary to place a submission for payment before Council.

LCE/4604/vm

R. J. Orde
(R. J. Orde) Brigadier,
Judge Advocate General.

J.A.S.

Passed to you re
claim of Dr R. B. Mulloney

This occurred at Kentville

It is understood that the Holby
claims are covered by a
special P.C.

would this one be covered?

Yves Bernier

YVES BERNIER
LIEUT. COLONEL
ADMINISTRATION (4)

SEP 27 1945

213
-000057

18

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
(ARMY)

COURT OF INQUIRY -

ADMIN REGISTER NO
... 35,067....

V.E. Day Disturbances
A14 C.I.T.C. Aldershot, NS.

H.Q. 54-27-63-7.FD.5.(Adm.4(a)2)

OTTAWA, Ont.: 27 Jun 45.....

DATE OF ACCIDENT..... 8 May 1945.

SOURCE.....

COURT SAT..... 16 May 1945.

COURT CONVENED..... 19..

PROCEEDINGS ENDORSED
BY D.O.C..... 20 May 1945.

PROCEEDINGS SIGNED. 16 May 1945

PROCEEDINGS RETURNED FOR FURTHER
INFORMATION OR DIRECTION
..... 19...

PROCEEDINGS
FORWARDED..... 19..

CAUSE OF DELAYS: (In convening:

PROCEEDINGS RETURNED
TO N.D.H.Q..... 19..

(In forwarding:

222

PRECIS OF EVIDENCE:

Col. H C MacKendrick, C.O. A-14 C.I.T.C. Aldershot NS. states that it was anticipated that some disorder might arise following the proclamation of VE Day. A plan was then announced to the Coy. Cdrs. in a conference held on 4 May 45. All offrs. and NCOs. were to be confined to Camp as well as the Regt. Police, Fire Dept. Band and drivers. The Men's wet canteen was to be kept open with a moderate supply of beer available. In addition, one offr. who is living in Kentville was placed on duty in mufti with instructions to give early warning of any disturbance.

There was no disturbance within the camp or in the town of Kentville, the only occurrence being one group of about 25 soldiers who paraded through the main streets singing and who removed a few small flags from buildings on town.

Up until 2150 hrs on 8 May 45 everything was quiet. At 2150 hrs. the O.C. received a phone call from Sgt. McKay C Pro C. who stated that a large crowd was assembled on Webster St. in front of NSLS and that he feared his det. would be unable to control the crowd.

At 2200 hrs the OC instructed Major I.J. Bickerton to take a picket of 15 offrs. and 25 sgts. to town to assist.

At approx. 2230 hrs the soldiers began to arrive at the main gate in the trucks which had been sent to town for the purpose of bringing them back. They were sober and well conducted.

At about 0030 hrs, Major Douglas, Camp Field Offr. returned and reported that the town was clear of soldiers and quiet.

The east window of the Kentville liquor store was almost completely smashed out as was the door. The west window had a large hole in it. The C.O. was told that 130 bottles of liquor and 5 bottles of beer were not accounted for. There was a hole in the plate glass window of H.G. Evans drugstore adjoining the liquor store.

....

(2)

The crowd assembled in front of the Kentville liquor store consisted of about 250 service personnel and 100 civilians. The evidence would seem to indicate that the greater number of stones and bottles thrown at the window were thrown by service personnel.

Entry was presumably made through the back door.

FINDING OF THE COURT:

1. That a disturbance causing property damage to the value of \$951.65 occurred in the Town of Kentville, NS. at approximately 2130 hrs on the night of 8 May 45.
2. That during said disturbance, stock valued at \$517.65 was stolen from the N.S.L.C.B. Store.
3. That the disturbance and theft were participated in by service personnel and civilians.
4. That the Court is unable to declare the identity of any person or persons involved, due to the inability of the Witnesses examined to identify the guilty person or persons.
5. That all reasonable precautions were taken by the Military authorities concerned.
6. That the action taken by the Offrs and NCOs during the disturbance was correct and largely responsible for the preventing of further damage and loss.
7. That the Court can find no evidence that the disturbance was organized or planned and it is reasonable to assume said disturbance was the outcome of reports, both by press and radio, of disturbances in other places.
8. That owing to the fact that guilty person or persons cannot be identified, disciplinary action cannot be taken against these individuals, and in view of the behavior generally of the troops in this area, it is recommended that no disciplinary action be taken.

O.C. concurs.

CN/MP

C. Noel
(C. Noel),
Capt.,
Adm. 4(a)2.

s.19(1)

M.D. No. 6,
Halifax, N.S.

H.Q.C. 9039-14 Adm 3(b)3

26 Jul 45

REG NO.

NAME

INITIALS

J E

P

To: Secretary
N.D.H.Q.

Halifax, N.S.
19 Aug 45.

Acknowledged.

[Signature]
(D.A. WHITE) Brigadier,
D.O.C. M.D. No. 6.

217

000060

NO. **H.120-2-1 (JAG)**



CANADA

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

AUG 23 1945

Headquarters, M.D. No.6.

Halifax, N.S. 19 Aug 45. 194

Secretary,
Dept. of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ont.

Central Registry

NATIONAL DEFENCE

54-27-63-7 FS

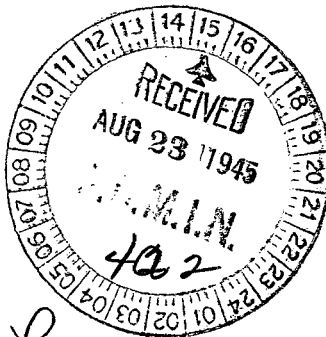
AUG 23 1945

Charge *Adm. 13-8-42*
Adm.

V-E DAY DISTURBANCES
A-14 CITC

Reference your HQ 54-27-63-7 FD 5 (Adm.4(a)2) **Returned to**
6 Aug 45

1. A Statement of Claim by Dr. R.B.Mulloney duly
certified is forwarded in duplicate as requested.



[Signature]
(D.A.WHITE) Brigadier
D.O.C., M.D. No.6.

270

Statement of Dr. R.B. Mulloney as to cost of
repairing the damage to his premises on Webster
St., Kentville, N.S. which damage was occasioned
by the V-E Day Riots.

3 Plate Glass Windows.....	\$	267.00
1 Small Window.....		2.58
Paid Eric Caldwell for labor and materials.....		44.53
Paid Harris Best for labor and materials.....		21.15
Repairs to rear of Liquor Store and miscellaneous.....		30.56

TOTAL..... \$ 365.82

I certify that the above statement is true to
the best of my knowledge and belief.

Dated at Kentville, N.S., August 16, 1945

R.B. Mulloney

Aldershot, N.S. 18 AUG 45

219

1. I CERTIFY THAT THE CLAIM FOR DAMAGES AS ITEMIZED
ABOVE IS FAIR AND REASONABLE AND THAT SUCH A CLAIM HAS NOT PRE-
VIOUSLY BEEN PASSED FOR PAYMENT.

J.J. Frape
.....
(J.J. FRAPE) Major
A-14 C.I.T.C.
President of the
Court of Inquiry.

Statement of Dr. R.B. Mulloney as to cost of
repairing the damage to his premises on Webster
St., Kentville, N.S. which damage was occasioned
by the V-E Day Riots.

3 Plate Glass Windows.....	\$ 267.00
1 Small Window.....	2.58
Paid Eric Caldwell for labor and materials.....	44.53
Paid Harris Best for labor and materials.....	21.15
Repairs to rear of Liquor Store and miscellaneous.....	30.56

TOTAL.. \$ 365.82

I certify that the above statement is true to
the best of my knowledge and belief.

Dated at Kentville, N.S., August 16, 1945

R.B. Mulloney

Aldershot, N.S. 18 AUG 45

218

1. I CERTIFY THAT THE CLAIM FOR DAMAGES AS ITEMIZED
ABOVE IS FAIR AND REASONABLE AND THAT SUCH A CLAIM HAS NOT PRE-
VIOUSLY BEEN PASSED FOR PAYMENT.

J. J. Trape
.....
(J.J. TRAPE) Major
A-14 C.I.T.G.
President of the
Court of Inquiry.

DATE.....

7/8/45

To CENTRAL REGISTRY.

cancelled

Please cancel.....

ad

B. F. of.....

8/8/45

Cancel up

To be pinned to face of
Jacket affected

ad

M. F. B. 389

1,500 Pads of 100—12-43 (3264)

H.Q. 1772-39-281

216

000064

Copy placed on Vol.2.

6 Aug 45

District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6,
HALIFAX, NS.

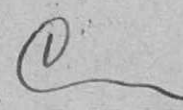
V/E Day Disturbances
A-14 C.I.T.C. CA.
Aldershot NS

Reference HC/120-2-1 (JAG)
14 Jul 45, under cover of which a letter
dated 11 Jul 45 and signed by Col. H.C.
MacKendrick, Commanding A14 C.I.T.C. was
forwarded, para. 6 thereof.

2. It is noted that the proceedings
of this Court of Inquiry contain a statement as
to damages caused to property of Dr. R. B. Mulleney
in the amount of \$388.00. No claim however has been
made in respect to these damages.

3. If a claim is made herein same should
be certified in the usual manner and forwarded to
this HQ. Any further claims in connection with the
disturbances at Aldershot NS., Yarmouth NS., Halifax
and Dartmouth NS. should be treated in the same
manner.

CN/MP


(A. E. Walford),
Major-General,
Adjutant-General.

M E M O R A N D U M

To -
D. ADMIN.

Department of National Defence

H.Q. 54-27-63-7 fd 5 (JAG)


OTTAWA, 2 Aug 45

V/E Day Disturbances

A14 CITC

ALDERSHOT, N.S.

In reply to your minute of 31 Jul, I am of the opinion that on the evidence in these proceedings there is nothing which would afford any basis for concluding that the Crown was under any legal liability to pay compensation.



(R.J. Orde) Brigadier,
Judge Advocate-General

RJO/2633

214



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

In reply quote No. HQ 54-27-63-7 FD 5 (Adm.4(a)2)

OTTAWA - 31 Jul 45

J.A.G.:

V/E Day Disturbances - A14 CITC -
Aldershot NS

Reference proceedings of Court
of Inquiry hereunder.

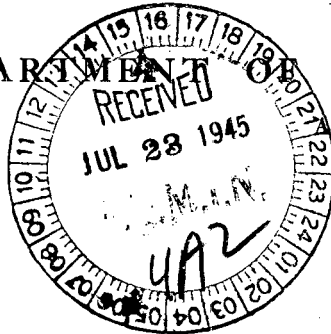
2. May your opinion be given please
regarding Crown liability herein.

James MacDermid
(J. E. MacDermid),
Colonel,
D. of Admin.

CN/MP



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY



Headquarters, M. D. No. 6,
Halifax, N.S., 19 July 45.

L
CONFIDENTIAL

Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ontario.

Court of Inquiry - V/E Day Disturbances
A-14 C.I.T.C., Aldershot, N.S.

L

CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY
<i>Subjects</i>
JUL 22 1945
File <i>54-27-63-7 F.5</i>
Chgd. to <i>D. Admin</i>
Referred to <i>Subm</i>

Ref HQ 54-27-63-7 FD 5 (Adm.4(a)2) d/5 Jul 45,
and further to this Headquarters letter numbered as above and dated
14 July 45.

2. Officer Commanding, A-14 C.I.T.C., reports on
thunderflashes as follows:

" Investigation discloses that Major Douglas, who reported
the throwing of thunder flashes, did not come in contact with
soldiers throwing thunder flashes, but presumed from what he
heard at some distance that the noise was caused by thunder
flashes.

Being unable to locate the individuals who are alleged
to have thrown the thunder flashes, it was impossible to
discover from whence they came.

It is regretted that more definite information cannot be
furnished. "

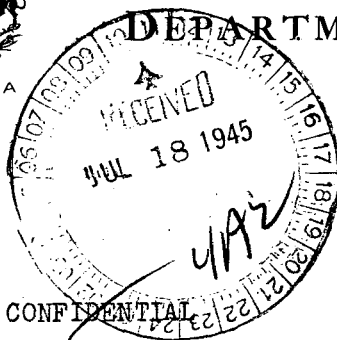
NFM/jmcg

4 *White*
(D.A. White) Brigadier
D. O. C., M. D. No. 6.

IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE No. 116/120-2-1 (JAG)



CANADA



Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ontario.

V/E Day Disturbances
A-14 C.I.T.C., C.A.
Aldershot, N.S.

Headquarters, M. D. No. 6,

Halifax, N.S.

CENTRAL REGISTRY Army	
CONF. SEC.	
54-27-63-7	
JUL 17 1945	
File	
Chgd. to	<i>J. R. Roy</i>
Referred to	<i>J. R. Roy</i>

Reference your HQ 54-27-63-7 FD 5

(Adm.4(a)2) d/5 Jul 45.

2. Two copies of the proceedings of the m/n Court of Inquiry are returned together with copy of a letter from Officer Commanding, A-14 C.I.T.C.

3. It is noted that no information has come forward regarding where the thunder-flashes were obtained, consequently this is being inquired into and upon receipt of the information it will be forwarded immediately.

GD/jmcg

(A. R. Roy) Brigadier,
T D. O. C., M.D.No.6.



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

C
O
P
Y

Aldershot, N.S.
11 JUL 45

Headquarters, M.D. 6
HALIFAX, N.S.

COURT OF INQUIRY - V-E DAY DISTURBANCES
A14 C.I.T.C., Aldershot, N.S.

Reference HC/120-2-1 (JAG) d/10 JUL 45.

2. The matter covered in para 4 of the letter under reply was investigated to the best of our ability immediately following the occurrence on the 8th May at the Kentville Liquor Store.

3. It was impossible to discover the identity of service personnel responsible for the break-in and no looted liquor was in evidence in the Camp nor was there any evidence of looted liquor being secreted outside the Camp.

4. I am of the opinion that since no information was available after the occurrence, nothing further would be gained by reconvening the Court.

5. With regard to para 2 (f): This para might convey the wrong impression. The estimated damage to property is in the neighborhood of \$434.00 and the value of the missing liquor is assessed at \$517.65.

6. Please cross-refer to my letter of this date, same file, covering a request for information as to payment of damages from Dr. Ray B. Mulloney.

HCM/em

SIGNED:

H.C. MacKendrick, Col.
Commanding A14 C.I.T.C.

210

35-067

*N.B.--As this form is applicable to any Board of Officers or Committee or Court of Inquiry, the blank is to be filled in accordingly.

The signature of each Officer composing the Board, etc., should appear on the last page of this form in the space provided therefor.

PROCEEDINGS of a* Court of Inquiry
assembled at Al4 C.I.T.C., Aldershot, N.S.
on the 16 MAY 45
by order of Col. H.C. MacKendrick, O.B.E., E.D.
Commanding Officer, Al4 C.I.T.C.
for the purpose of Inquiring into and reporting upon a
matter to be placed before it.

PRESIDENT

(J.J. Frappe) Major, Al4 C.I.T.C.

MEMBERS

(I. Bell) Lt., Al4 C.I.T.C.

(S.K. Charlton) Lt., Al4 C.I.T.C.

EVIDENCE BEGINS:

The Court having assembled pursuant to order, proceed to take evidence.

1st Witness Col. H.C. MacKendrick, Commanding Officer Al4 C.I.T.C., having been duly sworn, states:
I am Col. H.C. MacKendrick, Commanding Al4 C.I.T.C. It was anticipated that some disorder might arise following the proclamation of V-E Day, and the following plan was announced to Coy, etc. Comdrs in a Conference held at 1630 hrs 4 May 45: All Offrs and NCOs were to be confined to Camp, as well as the Regt Police, Fire Dept, Band, and Drivers I.C. of the Tpt Pl. The Mens' Wet Canteen was to be kept open as on normal holidays with a moderate supply of beer available and the remaining stock of beer stored in a protected place where it would be difficult to get at and its presence not known to the men in Camp. The telephone facilities between the Town Constable's office, which is also used by the town Pro Det, and Camp, are excellent, and it was believed that early warning of any disorder could be obtained by that means. In addition, one Offr, who is living in Kentville, was placed on duty in mufti, with instructions to give early warning of any disturbance which might occur.

Telegram A8783 from H.Q., M.D. 6, was received at 1630 hrs 7 May, which was too late to give effect to the order that the remainder of 7 May would be a holiday.

M.F.B. 303
500M-12-42 (7535)
H.Q. 1772-89-133

There was no disorder within the Camp or in the Town of Kentville, the only occurrence being one group of about 25 soldiers who paraded through the main streets singing, and who had removed a few small flags from buildings in town. These men dispersed when requested to do so by the Kentville Det C Pro C.

1st Witness
(Cont)

In order to keep the troops occupied and to provide a certain amount of physical exercise, the following program was carried out on 8th May:
Service of Thanksgiving attended by all ranks on the Parade Square at 1000 hrs;
March from Camp to Kentville and return, 1400 to 1600 hrs;
Campfire, sing-song, and band concert, 2030 to 2200 hrs.

At 2115 hrs I called the C Pro C Det in Town and was told that everything was quiet and there was no trouble. At 2120 hrs Major W.T. Walkar, RCAPC, Camp Paymaster, informed me that he had just driven from his residence in town through the main street of Kentville to Camp, and that everything appeared quiet and orderly.

At approximately 2150 hrs Sgt. McKay, NCO i/c Kentville Det C Pro C, phoned me stating that a large crowd was assembled on Webster St. in front of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission Store and that he feared his Det would be unable to control this crowd on account of its size. It was known that the Camp Field Offr, Major J.W. Douglas with two Offrs and four Sgts. had received notice of the assembling of this crowd and had just previously proceeded to Kentville to assist in control.

At approximately 2200 hrs I instructed Major I.J. Bickerton to take a picquet of 15 Offrs and 25 Sgts to town to assist the Field Offr.

I stationed myself close to a telephone where I could see the Main Gate of the Camp. A steady trickle of men was coming in the Main Gate and appeared to be sober and orderly.

At approximately 2230 hrs the men began to arrive at the Camp Gate in the trucks which had been sent to town for the purpose of bringing them back. They were sober and well-conducted, there being some singing.

At about 0030 hrs Major Douglas, Camp Field Offr, returned to Camp and reported that the town was clear of soldiers and quiet.

About 0930 hrs 9 May, I proceeded to Kentville to investigate what damage had been done and to investigate the situation generally. The front of the Kentville Liquor Store is flush with the edge of the sidewalk and consists of glass windows or door entirely across its front. Part of the stock was displayed on open shelves behind the serving counter and can readily be seen from the sidewalk. None of this stock was removed nor was any shutter or bar placed on the windows. The East window was almost completely smashed out, as was the door. The West window had a large hole in it. I was told that 130 bottles (incl some pints) of liquor and 5 bottles of beer were not accounted for. There was a hole in the plate glass window of H.G. Evans Drug Store, adjoining the Liquor Store on the East of 40 Webster St. It was reported that a window in an apartment above the Liquor Store was holed or smashed by a stone which fell in the apartment, but this damage was not seen.

208

1st Witness
(Cont)

I visited B.W. Roscoe, K.C., Mayor of Kentville, who was apparently under the impression that the disorder and disturbance had been entirely caused by service personnel. I informed him that my information was to the effect that a considerable number of civilians had been present.

From reports of Offrs and one of the Town Constables, Const. B. Folker, it was apparent that during the evening a number of civilians, some of them well known to the civilian police and of some standing in the community, observed without taking part, either to stir up or quell the gathering. Other civilians hindered the efforts of the picquets and encouraged disorder and disobedience by applause and remarks, and in some few cases, openly advocated disobedience.

From reports, it is apparent that Const. B. Folker was present during the disturbance and attempted without any great measure of success, to persuade the civilian portion of the crowd to move away.

2nd Witness

F79288 Sgt. MacKay, E.K. NCO i/c Kentville Det. #38 C Pro C, having been duly sworn, states:

I am F79288 Sgt. MacKay, E.K. i/c Kentville Det #38 C Pro C. I was on duty in the Town of Kentville on the nights of 7 and 8 May 45. On the night of 7 May 45, outside a few noisy gatherings, there were no disturbances in the town. On the night of 8 May 45, groups of soldiers, possibly 25 to 30 in strength, gathered here and there in the streets. These small crowds were dispersed and kept moving with no difficulty. In fact, most of the evening was spent by my Det in just keeping the crowds moving. Several times during the evening Col. MacKendrick phoned from Aldershot to ascertain conditions in town and we reported everything under control. At approximately 2130 hrs we noticed a large gathering in front of the Central Inn on Webster St., just to one side of the Liquor Store. We had this crowd fairly well under control until someone yelled "It's the Provost - let's roll the jeep over!" The crowd jostled around the jeep, rocking it up and down. In order to prevent damage to the vehicle I ordered the driver to drive back to the Town Hall. I held a quick conference with my men and immediately phoned Col. MacKendrick and reported the situation. This was about 2150 hrs.

I took my men back to where the crowd was gathered, but in view of the fact that we were so few in number, I ordered my men to return to the Town Hall to await rfts from the Camp. We removed our belts and arm bands to avoid too easy identification by the crowd and then returned again to Webster St. By then the Offrs and NCOs had arrived from Camp and were trying to disperse the crowd. I ordered my men to be alert and to try and identify anyone they saw committing any damage. It was quite dark and due to the large crowd of both soldiers and civilians it was impossible to identify anyone. Around 2300 hrs the crowd began

207

2nd Witness
(Cont)

to thin out and the troops commenced to return to Camp in the vehicles supplied by the Camp. Major Douglas asked me to supply a guard for the Liquor Store for the remainder of the night and I detailed three of my men who remained on duty in the store until 0730 hrs 9 May 45. There were no further incidents that night.

Q. Did you receive any special instructions regarding precautions to be taken over on V-E Day?

A. I received instructions from the D.A.P.M., M.D. 6 to encourage the troops to have a good time, to use tact in dealing with gatherings and to do our utmost to prevent damage to property, thereby avoiding any arrests.

Q. Was your Det. supplemented by any additional members of your Unit?

A. No, Sir.

Q. Were any arrangements made between your Det. and Alder-shot Camp regarding V-E Day?

A. Yes, previous to V-E Day I was in conference with the Adj. of Al4 C.I.T.C. and he made arrangements whereby I could, if necessary, contact the Field Offr at any time. Further to this, Col. MacKendrick phoned several times during both evenings to get reports on conditions in the town.

Q. Did anything occur during the early part of the evening that would indicate that a disturbance, such as happened at the Liquor Store, was brewing?

A. No Sir. On the contrary, the men were most co-operative all evening and I am at a loss trying to understand how or why the Liquor Store break should have happened.

Q. In what proportion were service personnel and civilians in this gathering?

A. I would say about fifty-fifty, Sir.

Q. Have you experienced any difficulties since the night of 8 May 45 in the way of crowds congregating or other types of disorders?

A. No Sir. Our work since then has been as it was before. Just the usual daily routine.

256

3rd Witness

Major J.W. Douglas, O.C. "C" Coy, Al4 C.I.T.C., having been duly sworn, states:
I am Major J.W. Douglas. I was Field Offr for Al4 C.I.T.C. for the period 8 - 14 May 45.

The relevant events leading up to and connected with V-E Day disturbances in Kentville, and the precautions taken to control the men of this Centre on V-E Day were as follows:

At the regular Chief Instructor's conference, held at 1645 hrs, 4 May 45, the C.O. issued instructions that a letter, issued by him, was to be read to all troops at the next Coy parade and that all Coy Comdrs were to speak to the men under their comd, cautioning them against improper behaviour on the day set aside as V-E Day, asking them to conduct themselves as soldiers and citizens of Canada should, that improper conduct would bring discredit upon themselves and upon the Centre, that the time for jubilation had not yet come as our Country was committed to continue the war with Japan. This was done in my Coy in the Camp Theatre at 0930 hrs 5 May 45.

At 1145 hrs 7 May 45, the C.O. held a meeting of all Coy Comdrs at which he announced that V-E Day would likely be the following day, Tuesday, and at which he laid down the program for V-E Day, and the precautions which were to be taken to prevent improper demonstrations. The were as follows: At 1600 hrs that afternoon the Centre would assemble on parade to listen to His Majesty the King and the Prime Minister. On the night of 7 May and following nights until the excitement had died down, all Offrs and NCOs were to remain in Camp available if trouble arose. On V-E Day a Thanksgiving Service would be held at 1100 hrs; a parade through the business district of Kentville at 1400 hrs; and a bonfire and sing-song at 2030 hrs with free beer at the evening meal.

At 1600 hrs the parade was held but as the speech of the Prime Minister had been postponed, the C.O. took the occasion to appeal to the men on parade to remember themselves on V-E Day and to conduct themselves as soldiers and citizens should. The parades for V-E Day were announced.

At 1730 hrs I mounted duty as Camp Field Offr, taking over from Capt. A.O. Gunn. At the evening meal in the Mess on 7 May the C.O. laid down that only three Offrs and three NCOs per Coy need remain in Camp, one of whom would be the Coy C.O. or 2i/c. It was generally agreed that this would be sufficient.

The night of 7 May was very quiet. On the C.O.'s instructions I, as F.O., drove through the town on two occasions at 2130 hrs and 2300 hrs. The town was very quiet with the exception of a few small groups of soldiers who paraded through the streets waving flags they had acquired and setting off the odd thunder flash.

206

3rd Witness
(Cont)

On the 8 May parades were held as announced . The Centre made a fine showing in the parade through the business centre of Kentville.

At 2000 hrs I was informed by the C.O. that the Canteen Sgt. was afraid that things were getting out of hand in the Wet Canteen. I proceeded there with Lt. S.E. Charlton and Lt. W. Essen, where I found the place filled with men who were noisy but orderly. I remained there for half an hour talking with various groups, found no trouble, and left to report to the C.O. At 2115 hrs I returned and assisted the Orderly Offr and Lt. Charlton in clearing the Canteen. We had no difficulty. Two Sgts. and two Provost had been posted in the Canteen for the evening and had kept fairly good order during the evening. I then proceeded to the D. & M. quarters where considerable destruction had been caused by two or three drunken drivers. They were caught in the act by the Coy CSM, who had placed them in the Guard Room and had organized the cleaning up of the destruction.

At 1945 hrs I proceeded to the Camp bonfire and sing-song being conducted by Major I.J. Bickerton. Here a noisy but orderly crowd of about 500 soldiers were assembled.

At 2150 hrs I went into the Sgts. Mess and had been there a few minutes when Lt. V. Hurst arrived. He was looking for the F.O. and informed me that he had received information that there was a riot in town and that men of the T.C. were breaking into the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission Store, that he had a station wagon outside, that Lt. Davis was with him. At my request Sgt. Phelan and two or three other Sgts. who were present, Lts. Hurst and Davis, and myself, proceeded to Kentville in the station wagon. I understood at the time they they had been sent to find me and give me instructions from the C.O. That is why I proceeded to town immediately with the party I raised.

At 2200 hrs or shortly thereafter, we reached Kentville, found the main street of the town and the station, deserted, with no noise in town. All the way in we had met small parties of men proceeding back to Camp in an orderly fashion and even at the bridge, which is only 400 ft. from the end of Webster St. on which the Liquor Store is located, there were men proceeding quietly toward Camp.

On rounding the corner into Webster St. we found a crowd of about 250 service personnel and 100 civilians gathered in front of the Liquor Store. They were loosely packed and just wandering around with the greater number on the sidewalk on the opposite side of the street from the store. As we drove from Camp I had given instructions that no show of authority or force was to be made. If the crowd were intent on entering the store and there had been drinking, it would be useless for a small party to try to stop them and might only antagonize them. We were to circulate through them to try to control and quiet them and get their feelings. This was done. In my opinion, the great majority of the crowd were sober and orderly, there was little noise or shouting, they were cheery and easy to talk to. There were about 10 or 15 men who were under the influence of liquor and there was another 20 who had been

204

3rd Witness
(Cont)

drinking some. The remainder were sober and seemed to be present as spectators, to see the fun. I heard many say that it would be wrong to enter the store and about 15 formed up in front of the store with Sgts. Elsey and Simpson, determined to keep the remainder from entering.

We circulated through the crowd and tried to persuade them to leave. This was difficult as they were so mixed with civilians, who were not very co-operative. Though they did not want to be disobedient, they were reluctant to leave while there was a possibility that something might happen. They would move off at our request only to mix with the crowd and remain. As there were so few of us we were at a disadvantage in knowing the names of very few and it was difficult to prevent this. Those who knew they were known by us were careful to be co-operative and appear innocent.

It seemed for a while that our efforts to move the service personnel might be successful for they began to move and thin out slightly in front of the store, when someone threw a missile through the window. This brought laughter and applause from the assembled crowd and they closed in again. From then on we were able to keep them quiet, but it became apparent that we would be unable to disperse them. Every few minutes from then on a missile was thrown through the window, each one bringing laughter and remarks from the crowd. About twenty stones and pop bottles in all were thrown, one going through the window of the Drug Store to the East of the Liquor Store, another through the window of an apartment above. In the dark and because of the crowd it was impossible to detect the throwers, who took care not to throw when there was a Sgt. or Offr near. While the greater number were probably thrown by soldiers, a number were seen to be thrown by civilians. Many of the stones seemed to come from a dark alley directly opposite from the Liquor Store. The stone throwing continued until about 2300 hrs.

At 2230 or shortly thereafter, three trucks arrived with Offrs and NCOs from Camp, Major I.J. Bickerton in charge. I proceeded to the trucks and gave instructions that a policy of persuasion and control was to be followed - no force was to be used. All the Offrs and NCOs dismounted and circulated among the men, controlling and talking with them.

At approximately 2240 hrs Lt. Hurst came to me and informed me that he thought an entry had been made from the back of the store and suggested that he and two or three Sgts. go around. I told him to do so and he and Capt. H. Ripley and four Sgts. proceeded down an alley to the East of the Drug Store. At 2245 hrs the Manager of the store entered, locked the back door and came out locking the front door behind him.

At about 2250 hrs the Offrs and NCOs present began to persuade some of the men present to embuss and leave for Camp in some of the trucks they had brought. Although the response was not great at first, gradually men began to leave for Camp by this means and by 2315 hrs only the more difficult to handle

3rd Witness
(Cont)

remained. These, on seeing how the crowd had dwindled, were persuaded to follow and all Army personnel had dispersed by 2330 hrs.

At 2300 hrs, as the soldiers began to thin out, it became possible for Major Jansen and I to clear the sidewalk in front of the Liquor Store and to place a line of Offrs and NCOs there. We then attempted to clear the sidewalk on the other side of the street with only partial success, as the townspeople were very unco-operative. We enlisted the services of one of the Town Police, who had little more success.

At 2330 hrs the crowd had dispersed and I considered asking the T.C. for a picquet to guard the Store for the rest of the night. I decided finally that a picquet of Provost provided by the C Pro C section in Kentville would be sufficient. The Sgt. i/c provided this picquet.

I entered the Liquor Store with the Manager, asked him the loss, and on quick examination, he told me it was not extensive. Only a few shelves near the back door showed signs of having been disturbed. The two windows and the glass in the door was broken. There was glass and large stones, similar to those to be found in the alley directly across the street from the Liquor Store, on the floor.

At 2359 I proceeded to Camp with the remaining Offrs and NCOs. All Offrs and NCOs of the Centre who were present showed great tact and understanding in handling the situation and the evening ended quietly and with good feeling on the part of men and Offrs. At 0010 hrs I reported to the C.O. that all was in order.

The efforts of the Offrs and NCOs from the T.C. were greatly hampered by the large number of civilians present. Although the greater number were there as sight-seers, a great many were sympathetic with those who wished to make the entry, many encouraging the men, by their remarks and applause, to make the break. A few actually advised and encouraged disobedience. Several civilians were intoxicated. I heard the remark several times that they had got away with it in Halifax, so why shouldn't they try it here.

Entry was presumably made through the back door. I don't know how the back door was opened, unless one of the men who offered to help as a guard, slipped through the broken window unnoticed and lifted the bar. This is hard to understand, however, because entry would have to be made through a jagged hole $2\frac{1}{2}$ ft. from the ground.

Had there been more liquor among the men - had the men wished to make the break, and if the few who were trying had had a following, things might have been quite serious. As it was, the condition of the majority was such that they were easy to control and reasonable.

203

4th Witness

Capt. H.E. Ripley, 21/c "D" Coy, Al4 C.I.T.C., having been duly sworn, states:

I am Capt. H.E. Ripley, 21/c "D" Coy, Al4 C.I.T.C. At about 2200 hrs 8 May 45 I was in the Offrs Mess. Major Bickerton told me to come down town with him as Col. MacKendrick had ordered him to take the Offrs picquet to Kentville as there was trouble at the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission Store.

The Offrs Picquet and myself went with Major Bickerton and proceeded to the corner of Aberdeen and Webster Sts. in the duty wagon. There was a crowd of about two to three hundred soldiers and civilians on the street, with the majority being near the Liquor Store. I walked through the crowd and talked to quite a few. They said they had heard the Liquor Store was broken into and had come to see the fun.

Major Douglas was at the Store when I got there and the windows were broken in the Store front. While I was standing there, two stones were thrown from an alley across the street. I went over and just at the edge of the crowd saw a civilian and a soldier. I asked them if they had thrown the stones, but they ran off into the crowd. On going back, Mr. Hurst said they were getting in the back door, so we went back of the Store. The rear door was open, also one leading to the upstairs. We had a man shut and prop this door on the inside, also put out a basement light in the other part of the building. Someone had put three or four Sgts. on duty at the back door, so we went to the front of the Store. By this time, they had some trucks and the men were getting in them to return to Camp.

The crowd seemed very quiet and easy to handle. All those we requested to go back to Camp were very willing to get in the trucks.

At about 2345 hrs the streets were clear of soldiers and the Provost were in the Liquor Store with the Manager, so we proceeded back to Camp.

Q. Did you identify anyone who agitated the crowd or caused any damage?

A. No. The stone throwing came from a dark alley across the street and it was impossible to identify anyone.

5th Witness

Major I.J. Bickerton, O.C. "E" Coy, Al4 C.I.T.C. having been duly sworn, states:

I am Major I.J. Bickerton, O.C. "E" Coy, Al4 C.I.T.C. On the night of 8 May 45, at approx 2145 hrs, while conducting a sing-song at the Sports Field, I was informed that there was a riot in the Town of Kentville. I immediately left the Sports Field and reported to Col. MacKendrick at the Offrs Mess. I received orders to pick up the Offrs picquet and report to the scene of the disturbance and take steps to control the crowd. On my arrival, I found a large crowd

5th Witness
(Cont)

of soldiers and civilians gathered in front of the Liquor Store and I noticed that both windows in the front of the Store were broken. Major Douglas, the Field Offr, had arrived there before me and had organized a protective cordon in front of the Store. The Offrs with me, together with a number of Sgts. mixed with the crowd in an effort to prevent fights and to discourage agitation and further damage. In an effort to divert the crowd's attention, I mounted the truck I had driven to town in and attempted to start the crowd singing. The troops proved most co-operative and we soon had a sing-song going. This continued until the tpt arrived from Camp and the Offrs and NCOs soon had the men getting aboard and proceeding back to Camp.

Q. Can you identify anyone who caused any damage?

A. No, I cannot.

6th Witness
(Cont)

Lt. G.V. Hurst, School of Instruction, Al4 C.I.T.C., having been duly sworn, states:
I am Lt. G.V. Hurst, S. of I., Al4 C.I.T.C. On the night of 8 May 45 I was in the Offrs Mess when word was received that a disturbance had broken out in the Town of Kentville. I contacted the Field Offr and reported to him and accompanied him to Kentville. When we arrived there we found a large crowd of soldiers and civilians gathered in front of the Liquor Store. We made our way through the crowd to the Store. The windows of the Store were broken when we arrived and stones were being thrown from across the street. We tried to keep the crowd as quiet as possible. One of the NCOs told me that he thought he heard someone inside the building. As the front door was closed, I proceeded around to the back of the building and as I did two people brushed past me. One was a civilian and the other a soldier. I left an N.C.O. on guard and went and got several more NCOs who prevented anyone else from entering the building. Shortly after, two members of the Naval Shore Patrol arrived. They were carrying flashlights, so we entered the building in an attempt to find out how entry was forced in the beginning. We were unable to find this information. I then went out and located one of the employees of the Store who came and locked it up. After that the crowd dispersed and we returned to Camp.

Q. Can you identify anyone you saw taking part in the theft from the Store, or who caused any property damage?

A. No Sir, it was too dark to see very clearly.

7th Witness

Lt. W.D. Stewart, School of Instruction, Al4 C.I.T.C., having been duly sworn, states:
I am Lt. W.D. Stewart, S. of I., Al4 C.I.T.C. At noon hour 8 May 45, the C.O. spoke to me and asked if I had a suit of mufti with me. I told him that I had and he instructed me to get dressed in civilian clothes and during the evening to take an occasional stroll through the town and report any disturbances or unusual gathering. Several times during the evening

7th Witness
(Cont)

I did this and all seemed quiet. In fact, I walked along Webster St. just shortly after 2100 hrs and everything was very quiet. About 2200 hrs I was again in the vicinity of Webster St. and saw a large crowd gathered in front of the Liquor Store. Upon investigation I found that the windows of the Store had been broken and there was quite a lot of milling around going on. As I was dressed in mufti I thought it better to leave the scene as it appeared to be coming under control of the Offrs and NCOs who were present. This was the only unruly incident I witnessed all evening.

Q. Can you identify anyone who was there as taking part in any agitation or causing any damage?

A. No Sir, I cannot.

8th Witness

Manning Gertridge (civilian), Manager of the N.S.L.C.B. Store, Kentville, N.S., having been duly sworn, states:

I am Manning Gertridge, Manager of the N.S.L.C.B. Store in Kentville, N.S. The following is a list of the stock and its value missing from this Store after the disturbance on the night of 8 May 45:

<u>Stock</u>	<u>Value</u>
Spirits	\$427.25
Wine	88.90
Beer	<u>1.50</u>
Total -	\$517.65

Property damage is as follows:

Pebble glass screen	\$ 40.00 (approx)
Screen door	<u>6.00 (approx)</u>
Total -	\$ 46.00

9th Witness

Dr. R.B. Mulloney (civilian), Kentville, having been duly sworn, states:

I am Dr. R.B. Mulloney, owner of the building occupied by the N.S.L.C.B. Store and by the Evans Drug Store. The damage to this building, caused by the disturbance on the night of 8 May 45 is as follows:

Three plate glass windows @ \$125.00 each	\$375.00
One door glass	10.00
One transom glass	<u>3.00</u>
Total -	\$388.00

APPENDICIES ATTACHED

A - PLAN showing scene of disturbance with relationship to Trg Centre.

FINDINGS

1. That a disturbance causing property damage to the value of \$951.65 occurred in the Town of Kentville, N.S. at approximately 2130 hrs on the night of 8 May 45.
2. That during said disturbance, stock valued at \$517.65 was stolen from the N.S.L.C.B. Store.
3. That the disturbance and theft were participated in by service personnel and civilians.
4. That the Court is unable to declare the identity of any person or persons involved, due to the inability of the Witnesses examined to identify the guilty person or persons.
5. That all reasonable precautions were taken by the Military authorities concerned.
6. That the action taken by the Offrs and NCOs during the disturbance was correct and largely responsible for the preventing of further damage and loss.
7. That the Court can find no evidence that the disturbance was organized or planned and it is reasonable to assume said disturbance was the outcome of reports, both by press and radio, of disturbances in other places.
8. That owing to the fact that guilty person or persons cannot be identified, disciplinary action cannot be taken against these individuals, and in view of the behaviour generally of the troops in this area, it is recommended that no disciplinary action be taken.

199

APPENDIX - A

NOT DRAWN TO SCALE

JP

C.I.T.C.
C.A.

ALDERSHOT ROAD
DISTANCE FROM TRG CENTRE TO CROWD
1.3 MILES

CORNWALLIS

RIVER

STATION

198

ALLEY

WEBSTER ST

CROWD

EVANS DRUG STORE
LIQUOR STORE

CORNWALLIS INN

MAIN ST

POLICE
STAT
FIRE
HALL

000083

1st Witness
(Cont)

In order to keep the troops occupied and to provide a certain amount of physical exercise, the following program was carried out on 8th May:

Service of Thanksgiving attended by all ranks on the Parade Square at 1000 hrs;
March from Camp to Kentville and return, 1400 to 1600 hrs;
Campfire, sing-song, and band concert, 2030 to 2200 hrs.

At 2115 hrs I called the C Pro C Det in Town and was told that everything was quiet and there was no trouble. At 2120 hrs Major W.F. Walker, RCAPC, Camp Pymaster, informed me that he had just driven from his residence in town through the main street of Kentville to Camp, and that everything appeared quiet and orderly.

At approximately 2150 hrs Sgt. McKay, HCO 1/c Kentville Det C Pro C, phoned me stating that a large crowd was assembled on Webster St. in front of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission Store and that he feared his Det would be unable to control this crowd on account of its size. It was known that the Camp Field Offr, Major J.V. Douglas with two Offrs and four Sgts. had received notice of the assembling of this crowd and had just previously proceeded to Kentville to assist in control.

At approximately 2200 hrs I instructed Major I.J. Bickerton to take a platoon of 15 Offrs and 25 Sgts to town to assist the Field Offr.

I stationed myself close to a telephone where I could see the Main Gate of the Camp. A steady trickle of men was coming in the Main Gate and appeared to be sober and orderly.

At approximately 2230 hrs the men began to arrive at the Camp Gate in the trucks which had been sent to town for the purpose of bringing them back. They were sober and well-conducted, there being some singing.

At about 0030 hrs Major Douglas, Camp Field Offr, returned to Camp and reported that the town was clear of soldiers and quiet.

About 0930 hrs 9 May, I proceeded to Kentville to investigate what damage had been done and to investigate the situation generally. The front of the Kentville Liquor Store is flush with the edge of the sidewalk and consists of glass windows or door entirely across its front. Part of the stock was displayed on open shelves behind the serving counter and can readily be seen from the sidewalk. None of this stock was removed nor was any shutter or bar placed on the windows. The East window was almost completely smashed out, as was the door. The West window had a large hole in it. I was told that 130 bottles (incl some pints) of liquor and 5 bottles of beer were not accounted for. There was a hole in the plate glass window of H.C. Evans Drug Store, adjoining the Liquor Store on the East of 40 Webster St. It was reported that a window in an apartment above the Liquor Store was holed or smashed by a stone which fell in the apartment, but this damage was not seen.

136

1st Witness
(Cont)

I visited B.W. Roscoe, K.C., Mayor of Kentville, who was apparently under the impression that the disorder and disturbance had been entirely caused by service personnel. I informed him that my information was to the effect that a considerable number of civilians had been present.

From reports of Officers and one of the Town Constables, Const. B. Folker, it was apparent that during the evening a number of civilians, some of them well known to the civilian police and of some standing in the community, observed without taking part, either to stir up or quell the gathering. Other civilians hindered the efforts of the picquets and encouraged disorder and disobedience by applause and remarks, and in some few cases, openly advocated disobedience.

From reports, it is apparent that Const. B. Folker was present during the disturbance and attempted without any great measure of success, to persuade the civilian portion of the crowd to move away.

2nd Witness

F79288 Sgt. MacKay, B.K. HCO i/c Kentville Det. 038 C Pro C, having been duly sworn, states:

I am F79288 Sgt. MacKay, B.K. i/c Kentville Det 038 C Pro C. I was on duty in the Town of Kentville on the nights of 7 and 8 May 45. On the night of 7 May 45, outside a few noisy gatherings, there were no disturbances in the town. On the night of 8 May 45, groups of soldiers, possibly 25 to 30 in strength, gathered here and there in the streets. These small crowds were dispersed and kept moving with no difficulty. In fact, most of the evening was spent by my Det in just keeping the crowds moving. Several times during the evening Col. MacKendrick phoned from Aldershot to ascertain conditions in town and we reported everything under control. At approximately 2130 hrs we noticed a large gathering in front of the Central Inn on Webster St., just to one side of the Liquor Store. We had this crowd fairly well under control until someone yelled "It's the Provost - let's roll the jeep over!" The crowd jostled around the jeep, rocking it up and down. In order to prevent damage to the vehicle I ordered the driver to drive back to the Town Hall. I held a quick conference with my men and immediately phoned Col. MacKendrick and reported the situation. This was about 2150 hrs.

I took my men back to where the crowd was gathered, but in view of the fact that we were so few in number, I ordered my men to return to the Town Hall to await rfts from the Camp. We removed our belts and arm bands to avoid too easy identification by the crowd and then returned again to Webster St. By then the Officers and HCOs had arrived from Camp and were trying to disperse the crowd. I ordered my men to be alert and to try and identify anyone they saw committing any damage. It was quite dark and due to the large crowd of both soldiers and civilians it was impossible to identify anyone. Around 2300 hrs the crowd began

195

2nd Witness
(Cont)

to thin out and the troops commenced to return to Camp in the vehicles supplied by the Camp. Major Douglas asked me to supply a guard for the Liquor Store for the remainder of the night and I detailed three of my men who remained on duty in the store until 0730 hrs 9 May 45. There were no further incidents that night.

Q. Did you receive any special instructions regarding precautions to be taken over on V-E Day?

A. I received instructions from the D.A.P.M., M.D. 6 to encourage the troops to have a good time, to use tact in dealing with gatherings and to do our utmost to prevent damage to property, thereby avoiding any arrests.

Q. Was your Det. supplemented by any additional members of your Unit?

A. No, Sir.

Q. Were any arrangements made between your Det. and Aldershot Camp regarding V-E Day?

A. Yes, previous to V-E Day I was in conference with the Adj. of All C.I.T.C. and he made arrangements whereby I could, if necessary, contact the Field Offr at any time. Further to this, Col. MacKendrick phoned several times during both evenings to get reports on conditions in the town.

Q. Did anything occur during the early part of the evening that would indicate that a disturbance, such as happened at the Liquor Store, was brewing?

A. No Sir. On the contrary, the men were most co-operative all evening and I am at a loss trying to understand how or why the Liquor Store break should have happened.

Q. In what proportion were service personnel and civilians in this gathering?

A. I would say about fifty-fifty, Sir.

Q. Have you experienced any difficulties since the night of 8 May 45 in the way of crowds congregating or other types of disorders?

A. No Sir. Our work since then has been as it was before. Just the usual daily routine.

194

3rd Witness

Major J.W. Douglas, O.C. "C" Coy, All C.I.T.C., having been duly sworn, states:
I am Major J.W. Douglas. I was Field Offr for All C.I.T.C. for the period 8 - 14 May 45.

The relevant events leading up to and connected with V-E Day disturbances in Kentville, and the precautions taken to control the men of this Centre on V-E Day were as follows:

At the regular Chief Instructor's conference, held at 1645 hrs, 4 May 45, the C.O. issued instructions that a letter, issued by him, was to be read to all troops at the next Coy parade and that all Coy Comdrs were to speak to the men under their comd, cautioning them against improper behaviour on the day set aside as V-E Day, asking them to conduct themselves as soldiers and citizens of Canada should, that improper conduct would bring discredit upon themselves and upon the Centre, that the time for jubilation had not yet come as our Country was committed to continue the war with Japan. This was done in my Coy in the Camp Theatre at 0930 hrs 5 May 45.

At 1145 hrs 7 May 45, the C.O. held a meeting of all Coy Comdrs at which he announced that V-E Day would likely be the following day, Tuesday, and at which he laid down the program for V-E Day, and the precautions which were to be taken to prevent improper demonstrations. The were as follows: At 1600 hrs that afternoon the Centre would assemble on parade to listen to His Majesty the King and the Prime Minister. On the night of 7 May and following nights until the excitement had died down, all Offrs and HCOs were to remain in Camp available if trouble arose. On V-E Day a Thanksgiving Service would be held at 1100 hrs; a parade through the business district of Kentville at 1400 hrs; and a bonfire and sing-song at 2030 hrs with free beer at the evening meal.

At 1600 hrs the parade was held but as the speech of the Prime Minister had been postponed, the C.O. took the occasion to appeal to the men on parade to remember themselves on V-E Day and to conduct themselves as soldiers and citizens should. The parades for V-E Day were announced.

At 1730 hrs I mounted duty as Camp Field Offr, taking over from Capt. A.O. Gunn. At the evening meal in the Mess on 7 May the C.O. laid down that only three Offrs and three HCOs per Coy need remain in Camp, one of whom would be the Coy C.O. or 21/c. It was generally agreed that this would be sufficient.

The night of 7 May was very quiet. On the C.O.'s instructions I, as F.O., drove through the town on two occasions at 2130 hrs and 2300 hrs. The town was very quiet with the exception of a few small groups of soldiers who paraded through the streets waving flags they had acquired and setting off the odd thunder flash.

193

3rd Witness
(Cont)

On the 5 May parades were held as announced. The Centre made a fine showing in the parade through the business centre of Kentville.

At 2000 hrs I was informed by the C.O. that the Canteen Sgt. was afraid that things were getting out of hand in the Wet Canteen. I proceeded there with Lt. S.K. Charlton and Lt. W. Eason, where I found the place filled with men who were noisy but orderly. I remained there for half an hour talking with various groups, found no trouble, and left to report to the C.O. At 2115 hrs I returned and assisted the Orderly Officer and Lt. Charlton in clearing the Canteen. We had no difficulty. Two Sgts. and two Provost had been posted in the Canteen for the evening and had kept fairly good order during the evening. I then proceeded to the D. & M. quarters where considerable destruction had been caused by two or three drunken drivers. They were caught in the act by the Coy CSM, who had placed them in the Guard Room and had organized the cleaning up of the destruction.

At 1945 hrs I proceeded to the Camp bonfire and sing-song being conducted by Major I.J. Bickerton. Here a noisy but orderly crowd of about 500 soldiers were assembled.

At 2150 hrs I went into the Sgts. Mess and had been there a few minutes when Lt. V. Hurst arrived. He was looking for the P.O. and informed me that he had received information that there was a riot in town and that men of the T.C. were breaking into the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission Store, that he had a station wagon outside, that Lt. Davis was with him. At my request Sgt. Phelan and two or three other Sgts. who were present, Lts. Hurst and Davis, and myself, proceeded to Kentville in the station wagon. I understood at the time they they had been sent to find me and give me instructions from the C.O. That is why I proceeded to town immediately with the party I raised.

At 2200 hrs or shortly thereafter, we reached Kentville, found the main street of the town and the station, deserted, with no noise in town. All the way in we had met small parties of men proceeding back to Camp in an orderly fashion and even at the bridge, which is only 400 ft. from the end of Webster St. on which the Liquor Store is located, there were men proceeding quietly toward Camp.

On rounding the corner into Webster St. we found a crowd of about 250 service personnel and 100 civilians gathered in front of the Liquor Store. They were loosely packed and just wandering around with the greater number on the sidewalk on the opposite side of the street from the store. As we drove from Camp I had given instructions that no show of authority or force was to be made. If the crowd were intent on entering the store and there had been drinking, it would be useless for a small party to try to stop them and might only antagonize them. We were to circulate through them to try to control and quiet them and get their feelings. This was done. In my opinion, the great majority of the crowd were sober and orderly, there was little noise or shouting, they were cheery and easy to talk to. There were about 10 or 15 men who were under the influence of liquor and there was another 20 who had been

192

3rd Witness
(Cont)

drinking some. The remainder were sober and seemed to be present as spectators, to see the fun. I heard many say that it would be wrong to enter the store and about 15 formed up in front of the store with Sgts. Elcey and Simpson, determined to keep the remainder from entering.

We circulated through the crowd and tried to persuade them to leave. This was difficult as they were so mixed with civilians, who were not very co-operative. Though they did not want to be disobedient, they were reluctant to leave while there was a possibility that something might happen. They would move off at our request only to mix with the crowd and remain. As there were so few of us we were at a disadvantage in knowing the names of very few and it was difficult to prevent this. Those who knew they were known by us were careful to be co-operative and appear innocent.

It seemed for a while that our efforts to move the service personnel might be successful for they began to move and thin out slightly in front of the store, when someone threw a missile through the window. This brought laughter and applause from the assembled crowd and they closed in again. From then on we were able to keep them quiet, but it became apparent that we would be unable to disperse them. Every few minutes from then on a missile was thrown through the window, each one bringing laughter and remarks from the crowd. About twenty stones and pop bottles in all were thrown, one going through the window of the Drug Store to the East of the Liquor Store, another through the window of an apartment above. In the dark and because of the crowd it was impossible to detect the throwers, who took care not to throw when there was a Sgt. or Officer near. While the greater number were probably thrown by soldiers, a number were seen to be thrown by civilians. Many of the stones seemed to come from a dark alley directly opposite from the Liquor Store. The stone throwing continued until about 2300 hrs.

At 2230 or shortly thereafter, three trucks arrived with Officers and NCOs from Camp, Major I.J. Bickerton in charge. I proceeded to the trucks and gave instructions that a policy of persuasion and control was to be followed - no force was to be used. All the Officers and NCOs dismounted and circulated among the men, controlling and talking with them.

At approximately 2240 hrs Lt. Hurst came to me and informed me that he thought an entry had been made from the back of the store and suggested that he and two or three Sgts. go around. I told him to do so and he and Capt. H. Ripley and four Sgts. proceeded down an alley to the East of the Drug Store. At 2245 hrs the Manager of the store entered, looked the back door and came out locking the front door behind him.

At about 2250 hrs the Officers and NCOs present began to persuade some of the men present to embark and leave for Camp in some of the trucks they had brought. Although the response was not great at first, gradually men began to leave for Camp by this means and by 2315 hrs only the more difficult to handle

3rd Witness
(Cont)

remained. Those, on seeing how the crowd had dwindled, were persuaded to follow and all Army personnel had dispersed by 2330 hrs.

At 2300 hrs, as the soldiers began to thin out, it became possible for Major Jansen and I to clear the sidewalk in front of the Liquor Store and to place a line of Offrs and NCOs there. We then attempted to clear the sidewalk on the other side of the street with only partial success, as the townspeople were very unco-operative. We enlisted the services of one of the Town Police, who had little more success.

At 2330 hrs the crowd had dispersed and I considered asking the T.C. for a picket to guard the Store for the rest of the night. I decided finally that a picket of Provost provided by the C Pro C section in Kentville would be sufficient. The Sgt. i/c provided this picket.

I entered the Liquor Store with the Manager, asked him the loss, and on quick examination, he told me it was not extensive. Only a few shelves near the back door showed signs of having been disturbed. The two windows and the glass in the door was broken. There was glass and large stones, similar to those to be found in the alley directly across the street from the Liquor Store, on the floor.

At 2359 I proceeded to Camp with the remaining Offrs and NCOs. All Offrs and NCOs of the Centre who were present showed great tact and understanding in handling the situation and the evening ended quietly and with good feeling on the part of men and Offrs. At 0010 hrs I reported to the C.O. that all was in order.

The efforts of the Offrs and NCOs from the T.C. were greatly hampered by the large number of civilians present. Although the greater number were there as sight-seers, a great many were sympathetic with those who wished to make the entry, many encouraging the men, by their remarks and applause, to make the break. A few actually advised and encouraged disobedience. Several civilians were intoxicated. I heard the remark several times that they had got away with it in Halifax, so why shouldn't they try it here.

Entry was presumably made through the back door. I don't know how the back door was opened, unless one of the men who offered to help as a guard, slipped through the broken window unnoticed and lifted the bar. This is hard to understand, however, because entry would have to be made through a jagged hole 2½ ft. from the ground.

Had there been more liquor among the men - had the men wished to make the break, and if the few who were trying had had a following, things might have been quite serious. As it was, the condition of the majority was such that they were easy to control and reasonable.

4th Witness

Capt. H.E. Riploy, 21/c "D" Coy, All C.I.T.C., having been duly sworn, states:

I am Capt. H.E. Riploy, 21/c "D" Coy, All C.I.T.C. At about 2200 hrs 8 May 45 I was in the Offrs Mess. Major Bickerton told me to come down town with him as Col. MacKendrick had ordered him to take the Offrs picquet to Kentville as there was trouble at the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission Store.

The Offrs Picquet and myself went with Major Bickerton and proceeded to the corner of Aberdeen and Webster Sts. in the duty wagon. There was a crowd of about two to three hundred soldiers and civilians on the street, with the majority being near the Liquor Store. I walked through the crowd and talked to quite a few. They said they had heard the Liquor Store was broken into and had come to see the fun.

Major Douglas was at the Store when I got there and the windows were broken in the Store front. While I was standing there, two stones were thrown from an alley across the street. I went over and just at the edge of the crowd saw a civilian and a soldier. I asked them if they had thrown the stones, but they ran off into the crowd. On going back, Mr. Hurst said they were getting in the back door, so we went back of the Store. The rear door was open, also one leading to the upstairs. We had a man shut and prop this door on the inside, also put out a basement light in the other part of the building. Someone had put three or four Sgts. on duty at the back door, so we went to the front of the Store. By this time, they had some trucks and the men were getting in them to return to Camp.

The crowd seemed very quiet and easy to handle. All those we requested to go back to Camp were very willing to get in the trucks.

At about 2345 hrs the streets were clear of soldiers and the Provost were in the Liquor Store with the Manager, so we proceeded back to Camp.

Q. Did you identify anyone who agitated the crowd or caused any damage?

A. No. The stone throwing came from a dark alley across the street and it was impossible to identify anyone.

5th Witness

Major I.J. Bickerton, O.C. "E" Coy, All C.I.T.C., having been duly sworn, states:

I am Major I.J. Bickerton, O.C. "E" Coy, All C.I.T.C. On the night of 8 May 45, at approx 2145 hrs, while conducting a sing-song at the Sports Field, I was informed that there was a riot in the Town of Kentville. I immediately left the Sports Field and reported to Col. MacKendrick at the Offrs Mess. I received orders to pick up the Offrs picquet and report to the scene of the disturbance and take steps to control the crowd. On my arrival, I found a large crowd

189

5th Witness
(Cont)

of soldiers and civilians gathered in front of the Liquor Store and I noticed that both windows in the front of the Store were broken. Major Douglas, the Field Offr, had arrived there before me and had organized a protective cordon in front of the Store. The Offrs with me, together with a number of Sgts. mixed with the crowd in an effort to prevent fights and to discourage agitation and further damage. In an effort to divert the crowd's attention, I mounted the truck I had driven to town in and attempted to start the crowd singing. The troops proved most co-operative and we soon had a sing-song going. This continued until the tpt arrived from Camp and the Offrs and NCOs soon had the men getting aboard and proceeding back to Camp.

Q. Can you identify anyone who caused any damage?

A. No, I cannot.

6th Witness
(Cont)

Lt. G.V. Hurst, School of Instruction, All C.I.T.C., having been duly sworn, states:
I am Lt. G.V. Hurst, S. of I., All C.I.T.C. On the night of 8 May 45 I was in the Offrs Mess when word was received that a disturbance had broken out in the Town of Kentville. I contacted the Field Offr and reported to him and accompanied him to Kentville. When we arrived there we found a large crowd of soldiers and civilians gathered in front of the Liquor Store. We made our way through the crowd to the Store. The windows of the Store were broken when we arrived and stones were being thrown from across the street. We tried to keep the crowd as quiet as possible. One of the NCOs told me that he thought he heard someone inside the building. As the front door was closed, I proceeded around to the back of the building and as I did two people brushed past me. One was a civilian and the other a soldier. I left an N.C.O. on guard and went and got several more NCOs who prevented anyone else from entering the building. Shortly after, two members of the Naval Shore Patrol arrived. They were carrying flashlights, so we entered the building in an attempt to find out how entry was forced in the beginning. We were unable to find this information. I then went out and located one of the employees of the Store who came and locked it up. After that the crowd dispersed and we returned to Camp.

Q. Can you identify anyone you saw taking part in the theft from the Store, or who caused any property damage?

A. No Sir, it was too dark to see very clearly.

7th Witness

Lt. W.D. Stewart, School of Instruction, All C.I.T.C., having been duly sworn, states:
I am Lt. W.D. Stewart, S. of I., All C.I.T.C. At noon hour 8 May 45, the C.O. spoke to me and asked if I had a suit of mufti with me. I told him that I had and he instructed me to get dressed in civilian clothes and during the evening to take an occasional stroll through the town and report any disturbances or unusual gathering. Several times during the evening

188

7th Witness
(Cont)

I did this and all seemed quiet. In fact, I walked along Webster St. just shortly after 2100 hrs and everything was very quiet. About 2200 hrs I was again in the vicinity of Webster St. and saw a large crowd gathered in front of the Liquor Store. Upon investigation I found that the windows of the Store had been broken and there was quite a lot of milling around going on. As I was dressed in mufti I thought it better to leave the scene as it appeared to be coming under control of the Offro and NCOs who were present. This was the only unruly incident I witnessed all evening.

Q. Can you identify anyone who was there as taking part in any agitation or causing any damage?

A. No Sir, I cannot.

8th Witness

Manning Gertridgo (civilian), Manager of the H.S.L.C.B. Store, Kentville, N.S., having been duly sworn, states:

I am Manning Gertridgo, Manager of the H.S.L.C.B. Store in Kentville, N.S. The following is a list of the stock and its value missing from this Store after the disturbance on the night of 8 May 45:

<u>Stock</u>	<u>Value</u>
Spirits	\$427.25
Wine	88.90
Beer	<u>1.50</u>
Total -	\$517.65

Property damage is as follows:

Pebble glass screen	\$ 40.00 (approx)
Screen door	<u>6.00 (approx)</u>
Total -	\$ 46.00

9th Witness

Dr. R.B. Hallenoy (civilian), Kentville, having been duly sworn, states:

I am Dr. R.B. Hallenoy, owner of the building occupied by the H.S.L.C.B. Store and by the Evans Drug Store. The damage to this building, caused by the disturbance on the night of 8 May 45 is as follows:

Three plate glass windows @ \$125.00 each	\$375.00
One door glass	10.00
One transom glass	<u>3.00</u>
Total -	\$388.00

APPENDICIES ATTACHED

A - PLAN showing scene of disturbance with relationship to Trg Centre.

187

FINDINGS

1. That a disturbance causing property damage to the value of \$951.65 occurred in the Town of Montville, N.S. at approximately 2130 hrs on the night of 8 May 45.
2. That during said disturbance, stock valued at \$517.65 was stolen from the H.S.L.C.B. Store.
3. That the disturbance and theft were participated in by service personnel and civilians.
4. That the Court is unable to declare the identity of any person or persons involved, due to the inability of the Witnesses examined to identify the guilty person or persons.
5. That all reasonable precautions were taken by the Military authorities concerned.
6. That the action taken by the Offrs and NCOs during the disturbance was correct and largely responsible for the preventing of further damage and loss.
7. That the Court can find no evidence that the disturbance was organized or planned and it is reasonable to assume said disturbance was the outcome of reports, both by press and radio, of disturbances in other places.
8. That owing to the fact that guilty person or persons cannot be identified, disciplinary action cannot be taken against these individuals, and in view of the behaviour generally of the troops in this area, it is recommended that no disciplinary action be taken.

186

NOT DRAWN TO SCALE

[Handwritten signature]

A.H.C.I.T.G.
C.A.

ALDERSHOT ROAD
DISTANCE FROM TRG CENTRE TO CROWD
1.3 MILES

CORNWALLIS

RIVER

STATION

185

ALLEY

WEBSTER ST

CROWD

EVANS DRUG STORE
LIQUOR STORE

CORNWALLIS INN

MAIN ST

POLICE
STAT
FIRE
HALL

FINDING IF REQUIRED:—

me

[Signature]

Signed at

Aldershot Camp N.S.

[Signature]

(Signature)

PRESIDENT

A-14 C.I.T.C. (CA)

(Unit)

this *16th* day of

May

194 *5*

A-14 C.I.T.C. (CA)

(Signature)

(Unit)

MEMBERS

[Signature]

(Signature)

A-14 C.I.T.C. (CA)

(Unit)

Opinion of
Commanding
Officer:—

Concur

[Signature]
16 May 45

FORWARDED.

Halifax, N.S.
20 June 45.

[Signature]
(D.A. White) Brigadier,
District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6.

FINDING IF REQUIRED:—

SS

Signed at

Aldershot Camp N.S. *Gray M. G.* *A-14 CITE (CA)*
(Signature) (Unit)

PRESIDENT

this *16* day of

May 194*5*

A-14 CITE (CA)
(Unit)

H. Barton Lt
(Signature)

A-14 CITE (CA)
(Unit)

MEMBERS

Opinion of
Commanding
Officer:—

Concur
H. C. MacKenzie
16 May 45

FORWARDED.

Halifax, N.S.
20 June 45.

D. A. White
(D.A. White) Brigadier,
District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6.

Cott Mail

To follow up

13

YVES BERNIER
LIEUT. COLONEL
ADMINISTRATION (4)

104

1945

183

000098

M E M O R A N D U M

TO: DAG (B)

Dept of National Defence (Army)

HQ 54-27-63-7 FD 5 Adm.

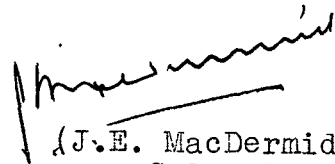
Ottawa, Ont., 5 Jul 45.

Court of Inquiry - VE Day Disturbances
A 14 CITC Aldershot NS

Draft letter to DOC 6 is recommended for signature.

2. The Court of Inquiry in this case is certainly not satisfactory. None of the Other Ranks that were present at the disturbance were called in order to identify the personnel who actually participated.

3. This case differs greatly from the Halifax disturbance in that the Army definitely took lead in the disturbance.


(J.E. MacDermid)
Colonel
D Adm

JEM/MW

182

HQ 54-27-63-7 FD 5
(Adm.4(a)2)

Army

5 Jul 45

District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6,
HALIFAX, N.S.

Court of Inquiry - V.E. Day Disturbances
A-14 C.I.T.C. Aldershot NS

Reference MC/120-2-1 (JAG) 20 Jun 45.

2. Although it was stated in this H.Q.'s wire, ranks 3352, dated 12 May 45, para 5, that this Court be assembled by you, a Unit Court was convened. It is felt that a District Court of Inquiry in the circumstances would most likely have been more satisfactory.

3. However, this Unit Court has been reviewed, and the following is noted:-

- (a) Major J.W. Douglas, O.C. "C" Coy. A14 CITC on page 5 of the proceedings states that on the night of 7 May 45 a few small groups of soldiers paraded through the streets waving flags and setting off the odd thunder flash. There is no information as to where the thunder flashes were obtained, and there appears to have been no action taken to fix responsibility herein.
- (b) A definite plan was announced and put into effect at A14 CITC Aldershot, NS to ensure maintenance of discipline on VE Day.
- (c) At 2150 hours on 3 May 45 a crowd assembled in front of the Kentville Liquor Store consisting of about 250 service personnel and 100 civilians.
- (d) The evidence indicates that the greater number of stones and bottles thrown at the window of the liquor store were thrown by service personnel.
- (e) The east window of the Kentville Liquor Store was almost completely smashed out as was the door. The west window had a large hole in it. There was a hole in the plate glass window of H.G. Evans Drug Store adjoining the Liquor Store.
- (f) The N.S.L.C.B. store was entered presumably through the back door and 130 bottles of liquor and 5 bottles of beer are not accounted for.

Damage to property in the amount of \$951.65 was caused. Stock valued at \$517.65 was stolen.

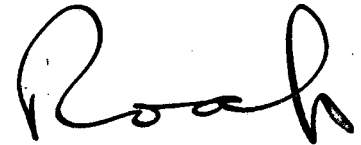
- (g) Quick action was taken, once the situation in front of the Liquor Store was known, by Camp authorities to return all service personnel to Camp.

2.

4. It would, however, seem that no effort has been made to identify service personnel who entered the store or who were found in possession of looted liquor. The proceedings do not contain the evidence of any service personnel present at the gathering in front of the liquor store. It is felt that if this evidence is obtained, responsibility might be fixed.

5. I am therefore directed to say that the foregoing should be investigated further for the purpose of obtaining further evidence, which might lead to the discovery of either service personnel responsible for the break in or for harbouring looted liquor.

6. Herewith returned in duplicate proceedings of this Court of Inquiry for additional evidence on the foregoing points.



(A. E. Walford),
Major-General,
Adjutant-General.

Encl. CN/MP

180

IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE No. HC/120-2-1 (JAG)



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

Headquarters, M. D. No. 6,
Halifax, N.S., 20 June 45.

CONFIDENTIAL

Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ontario.

Court of Inquiry - V.E. Day Disturbances
A-14 C.I.T.C. - Aldershot, N.S.

CENTRAL REGISTRY Army
54-27-63-7 #105
JUN 22 1945
File
Chgd. to
Referred to <i>W. Edm.</i>

Proceedings of this Court of Inquiry are forwarded in duplicate, there is included in the said proceedings all of the available evidence together with a rough sketch showing the location of the Training Centre and also where the disturbances occurred.

2. There is also attached hereto a copy of the covering letter from the Officer Commanding, A-14 C.I.T.C.

NFM/jmcg
AB

D.A. White
(D.A. White) Brigadier,
D. O. C., M. D. No. 6.

IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE No. A14/5-4-A

COPY/jmcg.



CANADA

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

Aldershot, N.S.
31 May 45

Headquarters, M.D. 6.
HALIFAX, N.S.

COURT OF INQUIRY
V/E Day Disturbances

Reference HC/120-2-2 (JAG) d/29 May 45.

2. It may well be that it would be possible at this date to identify Army personnel who were in the crowd in front of the Liquor Store. No attempt was made to secure the names of soldiers so situated, since the vast majority of them were doing nothing illegal so far as we are aware, and it is not intended that any action should be taken against these men, who simply formed part of the crowd.

3. As was stated by several witnesses in the Court, it was impossible to identify any soldiers who were engaged in breaking into or entering the Store or throwing missiles, since they took particular care not to commit any of these acts when near enough to an Officer or NCO to be observed. No disciplinary action was taken nor were any charges laid in the Police Court.

4. A sketch is now attached to the proceedings as requested. It does not show "nearby locations where soldiers might be living". Somewhere between one and two hundred soldiers from this Camp have their wives living in the Town of Kentville, and generally speaking, live in separate localities, mostly rooms in boarding-houses or private houses. It is not considered that this is the information which you require. There is no location, so far as I am aware, where any number of soldiers live.

Sgd. H.C. MacKendrick
(H.C. MacKendrick, Col.
Commanding A14 C.I.T.C.

HC/M/em

178

000104

H.Q. 54-27-63-7 Vol.2 (JAG/O-3)

23 October 1945.



The Deputy Minister of Justice,
O T T A W A .

V-J Day Disturbances
Kentville, NS

With reference to telephone conversation between yourself and Brigadier Orde, the Judge Advocate General, and pursuant to Order-in-Council P.C. 80/1045 dated 19 March 1940, I have the honour to submit herewith proceedings of Court of Inquiry in connection with the above-noted matter and would respectfully request the opinion on the points noted below:-

- (a) Is there any legal liability on the part of the Crown in this matter;
- (b) If so, should the claims be settled in full or an effort made to obtain a compromise.

When the proceedings have served your purpose, may they please be returned.

ECE/GP
Enc.

ad
Deputy Minister

*lick
p. 2*

T
177

No. HS/150-1-3 (JAG)



CANADA

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

Headquarters, M. D. No. 6,
Halifax, N.S., 4th Oct 45. 194

SECRET

Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ontario.

Court of Inquiry - Disturbance
KENTVILLE, N.S. - 12 Aug 45.

OCT 8 1945
54-27-63-7
Original to
Referred to *by Admin*

Ref your HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol.2 (Adm 4)
dated 24 Sep 45 and further to our letter numbered HS/150-1-3
(JAG) dated 21st Sept 45. *on 7/10 7-2 on 10/1*

2. Two copies of actual costs of repairs
in respect of the claimants in the m/n Court of Inquiry are
forwarded.

J.A.S.
Please note accounts raised
For necessary action please

YVES BERNIER
LIEUT. COLONEL
ADMINISTRATION (4)

Stewart
(J.C. Stewart) Brigadier,
D. O. C., M. D. No. 6.

N.D. 23

3000M-10-44 (5769)

H.Q. 1772-101-23

OCT 10 1945

176
000106

ROCKWELL, LIMITED

TELEPHONE 474

HARDWARE, PLUMBING AND HEATING

ACCOUNT NO.

KENTVILLE, N. S.

SOLD TO Dept. of National Defence,
A 14 Canadian Infantry Training Centre, Sept. 1945.
ADDRESS Aldershot, N. S.

ACCOUNTS RENDERED MONTHLY

TERMS STRICTLY 30 DAYS

OVERDUE ACCOUNTS SUBJECT TO DRAFT

KENTVILLE PUBLISHING CO., LTD.

Day	PARTICULARS	Folio	Credit	Debit	Total
15	For Calkin Building, Kentville, N.S. To 1 light Plate Glass 82 1/2" x 90"			150.00	
	" 1 " " " 31" x 90"			43.00	193.00
				<u>\$193.00</u>	
	Approximate Cost of Installation			\$25.00	
	<i>E. R. Calkin</i> <i>W. J. A. Bernick P.C.</i> I consider the above cost fair and reasonable.				
	<i>J. Hays</i> President Court of Inquiry				

175

000107

ROCKWELL, LIMITED

TELEPHONE 474

HARDWARE, PLUMBING AND HEATING

ACCOUNT NO.

KENTVILLE, N. S.

SOLD TO Dept. of National Defence,
A 14 Canadian Infantry Training Centre,
ADDRESS Aldershot, N. S.

August 1945.

ACCOUNTS RENDERED MONTHLY

KENTVILLE PUBLISHING CO., LTD.

TERMS STRICTLY 30 DAYS
OVERDUE ACCOUNTS SUBJECT TO DRAFT

Day	PARTICULARS	Folio	Credit	Debit	Total
27	<u>Palmer Property, Kentville, N. S.</u> To 1 light Plate Glass 60" x 78"			65.00	\$65.00
<p>I consider the above cost fair and reasonable.</p> <p><u>Gray May</u> President Court of Inquiry</p>					
174					

000108

ROCKWELL, LIMITED

TELEPHONE 474

HARDWARE, PLUMBING AND HEATING

ACCOUNT NO.

KENTVILLE, N. S.

SOLD TO

Dept. of National Defence,
A-14 Canadian Infantry Training Centre,
Aldershot, N. S.


Sept. 1945.

TERMS STRICTLY 30 DAYS

ACCOUNTS RENDERED MONTHLY

OVERDUE ACCOUNTS SUBJECT TO DRAFT

KENTVILLE PUBLISHING CO., LTD.

Day	PARTICULARS	Folio	Credit	Debit	Total
14	For Mrs. H. B. Newcombe's Store, Kentville, N. S. To 1 light plate glass 84" x 105"			165.00	\$165.00
	Approximate Cost of Installation			\$25.00	
	I consider the above cost fair and reasonable.				
	 President Court of Inquiry				
				173	

000109

H. R. BEST

to

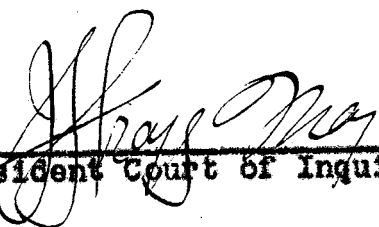
G. R. PALMER

To labor replacing window

Webster St.

\$14.25

I consider the above cost fair
and reasonable.



President Court of Inquiry

172

Statement of Dr. R.B. Mulloney as to cost of
repairing the damage to his premises on Webster
St., Kentville, N.S. which damage was occasioned
by Soldiers during the "V-J" day disturbances of
12th of August, 1945.

2 Plate Glass Windows @ \$89.00.....	\$178.00
1 Plate Glass Window @ 45.00.....	45.00
3 Small Windows @ 5.00.....	15.00
Labor and Materials for replacement.....	<u>44.00</u>
TOTAL.....	\$282.00

I certify that the above statement is true
to the best of my knowledge and belief.

Dated at Kentville, N.S., September 14, 1945

R B Mulloney

I certify that the above costs are fair and reasonable.

W. H. Fray Major.
Pres. Court of Inquiry.

171

CGD/SJA
ARMY MESSAGE
(OUTGOING)

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

CLEAR

FILE HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol. 2
Adm. 4(a) 1

PLACE

DATE

District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6,
HALIFAX, N.S.

OTTAWA, Ont.

3 Oct 45

RANKS 9053 UNCLASSIFIED RELET HS/150-1-3 (JAG) D/21 SEP 45 RE
DISTURBANCES KENTVILLE stop PROCEEDINGS REVIEWED BY
JAG WHO IS OF OPINION CROWN UNDER NO LEGAL LIABILITY
TO PAY COMPENSATION FOR DAMAGE stop IT IS PRESUMED
REQUEST FOR BILLS FOR ACTUAL COST OF DAMAGE TO
PROPERTIES WAS MADE WITHOUT PREJUDICE

Not sent

170

ADJUTANT-GENERAL

D

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MAY BE SENT AS WRITTEN BY ANY MEANS

EXCEPT INCLUDING { WIRELESS

DEGREE OF PRIORITY

TIME OF ORIGIN

SIGNED

A. E. Walford
Major-General
Adjutant-General

1530

COPY 1 FOR ARMY SIGNAL OFFICE

000112



In reply quote No. HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol 2 (JAG/0-3)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY
INTER-OFFICE CORRESPONDENCE

OTTAWA, 1 Oct 45.

TO: ADMIN.

Re Disturbances - Kentville, N. S.
12 Aug 45.

Reference your memorandum of 26 Sep 45 hereunder.

2. I have considered the material on file and I am of the opinion that even if a claim is submitted the Crown will be under no legal liability to pay compensation.

ECE/4604/vm

R. J. Orde
(R. J. Orde) Brigadier,
Judge Advocate General. *may*

FALSE DOCKET

FALSE DOCKET

H.Q. 51-27-63-7.

No. 9.

M.F.B. 387a
500M-6-41 (712)
H. Q. 1772-39-485

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE, CANADA

CROSS REFERENCE

Disturbances, A.D. 6.
C.A.S.F.

OK ✓

CENTRAL REGISTRY	DATE	P. A. OR B. F.	INITIALS	REFERRED TO	FOR REMARKS	INITIALS	DATE
					(If purpose for which referred cannot be expressed on one line, add minute to file and enter here "With Minute")		
					With Papers C.R. SEP 25 1945		
SEP 25 1945				Admin	Min. pl	Rce	000114 25-4-45



IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE

HS/150-1-3 (JAG)
No.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

ARMY

Headquarters, M. D. No. 6,
Halifax, N. S., 21 Sep. 45. 194

~~SECRET~~

Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ontario.

Court of Inquiry - Disturbances
KENTVILLE, N. S. - 12 Aug 45

SEP 24 1945
File 54-27-63-7 709
Chgd. 20/8/45 -
Referred to: [Signature]

Further to our HS/150-1-3 (JAG) d/3 Sep 45. 15/9/45
as Receipt

2. The bills for actual costs of damage to properties listed in the proceedings of this Court of Inquiry have been requested from the people concerned and will be forwarded as soon as received.

[Signature]
(J.C. Stewart) Brigadier,
D. O. C., M. D. No. 6

167

N.D. 23

3 Mil.-11-43 (2979)
H.Q. 1772-101-23

000115

*Admin 4
For action pl.
Retained may
for A+AG
25/9/45*

FALSE DOCKET

FALSE DOCKET

M.F.B. 387a
500M-6-41 (712)
H. Q. 1772-39-485

H.Q.

No.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE, CANADA

CROSS REFERENCE

CENTRAL REGISTRY	DATE	P. A. OR B. F.	INITIALS	REFERRED TO	FOR REMARKS	INITIALS	DATE
					(If purpose for which referred cannot be expressed on one line, add minute to file and enter here "With Minute")	166	
							000116

HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol.2
(Adm 4)

24 Sep 45

District Officer Commanding
Military District No. 6,
HALIFAX N.S.

COURT OF INQUIRY - Disturbance
Kentville, N.S. - 12 Aug 45

Ref HS/150-1-3 (JAG) d/3 Sep 45.

2. One copy of the proceedings of this Court of Inquiry is returned duly approved.

3. It is noted that the Court, as directed, investigated the extent of the property damage on account of the disturbance. It is also noted that the various estimates have been furnished and signed by the civilian party who suffered the damages. It is also noted that these estimates are certified as fair and just.

4. There is no indication however in the proceedings that claims have been actually received in this regard. Therefore, the question of Crown liability has not been given consideration. If and when claims are received, this HQ should be informed.

YB/MD

[Signature]
(A.E. Walford)
Major-General
Adjutant-General

[Signature]
To not furnish
claim. *[Signature]*

YVES BERNIER
LIEUT. COLONEL
ADMINISTRATION (4)

SEP 26 1945

000117

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

V-E DAY DISTURBANCES
A-14 CITC

A.D. Register No.

H.Q. 54-27-63-7 Vol.2 Adm.4(a)1

OTTAWA, Ont. 20 Sep 45

DATE 12 Aug 45

SOURCE MD 6

COURT SAT 13 Aug 45

PROCEEDINGS SIGNED 18 Aug 45

PROCEEDINGS APPROVED
BY DOC MD 6

2 Sep 45

PROCEEDINGS
FORWARDED

3 Sep 45

PRECIS OF EVIDENCE:

Col. H.C. MacKendrick, Officer Commanding, A-14 CITC, Aldershot, N.S., anticipating that disorders might arise following the ending of the war with Japan, put into effect the following measures: Commencing 11 Aug 45 an Officer was detailed to patrol the town in plain clothes, and arrangements were made for rapid telephone communication with Camp; an in-lying picquet of 15 Officers and 25 NCOs was arranged; a picquet of one Platoon, including Officer and NCOs was also arranged. The above were in addition to the normal Camp Patrol, Fire Picquet, Regimental Police, etc. The band was to be kept available and sufficient vehicles, with drivers, to move the above personnel.

The above arrangements were in effect on Sunday 12 Aug 45 and at approximately 2245 hrs that date, following the premature announcement over the radio of the cessation of hostilities, a person or persons unknown sounded the camp fire siren at Aldershot Camp. The camp personnel immediately fell in on their company alarm posts as laid down in Camp Fire Orders. Efforts were made to identify the person or persons responsible for the sounding of the alarm, however, as the alarm system consists of 14 boxes throughout the camp, it was impossible to identify those responsible.

When it was apparent that there was no fire the Officer Commanding caused the "stand down" signal to be sounded and the majority of the men started to return to their huts. However, almost immediately a few men formed up on the parade square with the intention of marching into Kentville. They were soon joined by hundreds of others. Approximately 15 or 20 soldiers then started walking towards the gate and were trying to encourage the others to follow. Most seemed reluctant to go, however, when a few decided to join the "Advance party" the remainder followed. It was apparent from their shouts that they were making for the Liquor Store in Kentville. The group consisted of approximately 400 new recruits and their dress varied from battledress to pyjamas. 164

Col. MacKendrick, upon being notified, immediately drove downtown in an effort to intercept the parade. He stopped the leading members of the crowd and suggested to them that if they wanted a parade it would be better to have an organized one complete with band. The soldiers that heard the O.C.'s remarks appeared to be willing to return to the parade square, however, those who could not hear him surged past and proceeded into town.

The Officers and NCOs picquets arrived at the Liquor Store before the crowd and formed up on the outside of the sidewalk in front of the store. A few civilians joined the mob. Stones were thrown and windows in the Liquor Store and surrounding stores were broken. Efforts were made to identify those throwing the stones but due to darkness the culprits slipped away, or got lost in the crowd. Electric lighting fixtures along the route followed by the mob were damaged, presumably by army personnel. Officers and NCOs were continually moving through the crowd trying to identify those throwing stones. The Officers, including the O.C., attempted to get the men to march back to camp to no avail.

000118

...../6

- 2 -

Approximately 20 minutes after the mob formed in front of the Liquor Store the band arrived, together with 5 army vehicles. The men were promised free beer upon their return to camp and followed instructions, climbed into trucks and were driven back to camp and free beer was issued. By approximately 0130 hrs all the men, with the exception of a few small groups, returned to their quarters.

No arrests were made and no names taken as it was felt by the OC and other Officers present at the disturbance that if this was done it would lead to further demonstrations as a large number of the men were new in the army, having just arrived in camp, and their reactions to discipline of such a nature could not be gauged.

The disturbance caused property damage to the estimated value of \$953.73.

FINDINGS OF THE COURT:

The Court, having carefully considered the evidence, report:

1. That a disturbance causing property damage to the estimated value of \$953.73 occurred in the Town of Kentville, N.S. on the night of 12 Aug 45.
2. That the disturbance was caused and participated in by service personnel from Aldershot Camp, N.S.
3. That the Court is unable to declare the identity of any person or persons causing any or all of the said damage, due to the inability of the witnesses examined to identify the guilty person or persons and is of the opinion that it was impossible, under the circumstances that existed, to identify the guilty parties.
4. That adequate and reasonable precautions were taken by the military authorities concerned.
5. That the action taken by the Officers and NCOs during this disturbance was correct and directly responsible for the preventing of further damage.
6. That the Court can find no evidence that the disturbance was organized or planned and it is reasonable to assume that the said disturbance was precipitated by an unpremeditated and spontaneous wave of excitement brought about by a false radio report of the Japanese surrender.
7. That owing to the fact the person or persons guilty of damaging property cannot be identified, disciplinary action cannot be taken against these individuals.

OPINION OF OC A14 CITC:

I concur in the finding of the Court.


163

OPINION DOC MD 6:

It is recommended that the proceedings of this Court of Inquiry be approved.

REMARKS:

CGD/SJA


(C.G. Devlin) Capt.
Adm.4(a)1



CANADA

SEP 7 1945

IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE

HS/150-1-3 (JAG)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

Headquarters, M. D. No. 6,
Halifax, N. S., 3 Sept 45.

SECRET

Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ontario.

Court of Inquiry - Disturbance
KENTVILLE, N.S. - 12 Aug 45.

CENTRAL CUSTODY Army	
54 27-63-7	
SEP 7 1945	
File...	
Chgd. to...	Dadm
Referred to...	

Two copies of the proceedings of the m/n
Court of Inquiry are forwarded.

2. It is noted in these proceedings that no
men have been identified as taking part in this disturbance.

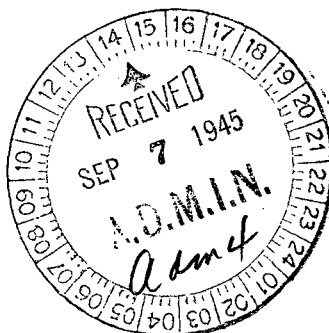
3. The proceedings were returned so that the
Court might reconvene with an officer of the AJAG Branch present
for the purpose of making an effort to identify any personnel.

4. This identification was not possible as is
shown by supplementary proceedings at Page 13.

5. After carefully reviewing the evidence it
would appear that there was ample opportunity for officers
and N.C.Os present at the disturbance to make identification of
men taking part, however, it is felt that the Commanding Officer
and officers present at the time were in a better position
to make an appreciation of the situation than anybody else
and it would seem that they had decided that the proper course
was to get the men back to camp in the shortest time and with
the minimum amount of disturbance. This seems to have been
achieved.

6. It is possible also that this might have
been the proper course rather than making any arrests or taking
any names, as evidence shows that a large number of the men
were new in the army and had just arrived in camp and their
reactions to discipline of such a nature was not able to be
gauged. 162

7. In view of all the circumstances it is recommended
that the proceedings of this Court of Inquiry be approved.



(D.A. White) Brigadier,
D. O. C., M. D. No. 6.

adm. for

CIPHER
MESSAGE

ARMY MESSAGE

(INCOMING)

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

CLASSIFIED

SECRET

PLACE FROM

DATE & TIME

HALIFAX N.S.

190550/AUG 45

C.G.S.

M.S.

D.M.O. & P.

A.G.
(ACTION)

ADM 9666

IMPORTANT

SECRET

TO DEFENSOR

RETEL AG 0205 DATED 15 AUGUST 1945

SITUATION NORMAL NOTHING TO REPORT

CMDG SIX

32571/ED/19071Q/AUG 45

G. CONTROL	
COPY FOR:	VAG
DATE:	AUG 19 1945
COPY ALSO REFERRED	
To:	For Action
Inform'n.	

NOTE: THIS MESSAGE HAS BEEN DISPATCHED IN CIPHER AND MUST NOT BE PUBLISHED OR DISTRIBUTED
OUTSIDE GOVERNMENT DEPARTMENTS, OR HEADQUARTERS OR RETRANSMITTED WITHOUT BEING PARAPHRASED.

COPY 2 ACTION

000121



PRIORITY A. G. C.

VER V AC NR 186 "" "" IMPORTANT ""

FROM COMD SIX HFX NS 18 1810P

TO DEFENSOR

COPY FOR: *VAG*

DATE:

AUG 19 1945

COPY ALSO REFERRED

To: For Action

..... Inform.

GR 21 BT

A9663 IMPDRTANT RETEL.AG0205 DATED 15 AUG 45 NOTHING TO REPORT

BT 18 1820P EC

THIS IS AN ACTION COPY		
IF INCORRECTLY DELIVERED, COMPLETE BELOW AND RETURN TO A.S.O. WOODS		
BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE
	<i>Ch</i>	<i>[Signature]</i>

63040

160

CIPHER
MESSAGE

ARMY MESSAGE

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

CLASSIFIED

(INCOMING)

S E C R E T

PLACE FROM

DATE & TIME

HALIFAX N.S.

170200P/AUG/45

C.G.S.

M.S.

D.M.O. & P.

A.G.
(ACTION)

**** I M P O R T A N T ****

A 9451

SECRET

DEFENSOR

RETEL AG 0205 15TH AUGUST 45 SITUATION REPORT.

60 CABTC (A) NORMAL (B) NORMAL

HALIFAX (A) NORMAL (B) NORMAL

A14 CITC (A) NORMAL (B) NORMAL

CHARLOTTETOWN

(A) NORMAL (B) NORMAL

NO.1 RTRNG BDE DEBERT N.S.

(A) NORMAL (B) NORMAL

DEFENDED PORT OF SYDNEY

(A) NORMAL (B) NORMAL

COMMANDING 6

A. G. CONTROL	
COPY FOR:.....	VAG
DATE:	
AUG 17 1945	
COPY ALSO REFERRED	
To:	For:

32257/JFC/170226Q/AUG/45

NOTE: THIS MESSAGE HAS BEEN DISPATCHED IN CIPHER AND MUST NOT BE PUBLISHED OR DISTRIBUTED
OUTSIDE GOVERNMENT DEPARTMENTS, OR HEADQUARTERS OR RETRANSMITTED WITHOUT BEING PARAPHRASED.

COPY 3 ACTION

159

CIPHER
MESSAGE

ARMY MESSAGE

(INCOMING)

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

CLASSIFIED

SECRET,

PLACE FROM

DATE & TIME

HALIFAX N.S.

161945/AUG 45.

C.G.S.

M.S.

D.M.O. & P.

A.G.
-ACTION

A. G. CONTROL

COPY FOR: VAG

DATE:

AUG 17 1945

COPY ALSO REFERRED

To: For Action

(B) NORMAL Inform'n.

***** I M P O R T A N T *****

JAG 9450.

SECRET.

RETEL AG 0205 SITUATION REPORT.

60 BATC

(A) NORMAL

HALIFAX AREA

(A) NORMAL

(B) NORMAL

A-14 CITB

(A) NORMAL

(B) NORMAL

CHARLOTTEVILLE

(A) NORMAL

(B) NORMAL

NO 1 TRG BDE DEBERT

(A) NO MILITARY DISTURBANCES STRONG PROVOST DETACHMENT

SUPPORTED BY FLYING PICQUET 140 MEN FROM 1 TRG BDE ON STAND BY. 1/3
OF TROOPS ALLOWED ON PASS TO TRURO.

(B) CIVILIAN DISTURBANCES NIL CIVILIAN CELEBRATIONS NIL
SITUATION NORMAL NO DISTURBANCES FORESEEN. ~~RETEL~~

DEFENDED PORT OF SYDNEY

(A) MILITARY DUTY AS USUAL ATTITUDE THROUGHOUT FORTS AND
OUTPOSTS PERSONNEL NOT CB MORALE AT PEAK NO TROUBLE WHATSOEVER PROVOST
PERSONNEL MAINTAINING PATROLS TO EXTENT OF FACILITIES.

(B) CIVILIANS BUSINESS AS USUAL ATTITUDE UPHELD BY SHOP-
-KEEPERS AND MERCHANTS LIQUOR STORES CLOSED AFTER SELLING OUT. NO
DISTURBANCES WHATEVER.

COMMANDING SIX.

32242/EA/1621500/AUG 45.

158

NOTE: THIS MESSAGE HAS BEEN DISPATCHED IN CIPHER AND MUST NOT BE PUBLISHED OR DISTRIBUTED
OUTSIDE GOVERNMENT DEPARTMENTS, OR HEADQUARTERS OR RETRANSMITTED WITHOUT BEING PARAPHRASED.

CIPHER
MESSAGE

ARMY MESSAGE

(INCOMING)

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

CLASSIFIED

SECRET

PLACE FROM

DATE & TIME

■ HALIFAX, N.S.

■ 160055P AUG 45

C.G.S.

M.S.

D.M.O. & P.

A.G.

(ACTION)

A. G. CONTROL

COPY FOR: *VAG*

DATE:

AUG 16 1945

COPY ALSO REFERRED

To:..... For Action

..... Informa.

**** I M P O R T A N T ****

ADM 9326

S E C R E T

DEFENSOR TO ■ CMDG 6

RETEL AQ 0205 AUGUST 15TH. SITUATION AS OF MIDNIGHT 15

AUGUST HALIFAX AREA

(A) DANCE AT NO 6 DISTRICT DEPOT NO DISTURBANCES

AT ARENA

(B) 2 STREET DANCES, DANCE AT FORUM BOXING ■■■■. GENERAL

LIQUOR STORES CAFES AND THEATRES OPEN HEAVY MIST DURING EVENING TURNING
TO HEAVY RAIN AT 2230 HOURS. NO DISTURBANCES. FOLLOWING REPORTED BY
TELEPHONE.

YARMOUTH.

(A) NIL

(B) NIL. TROOPS AT RCAF STATION DANCE.

SYDNEY

(A) TROOPS CB AS FAR AS POSSIBLE/DANCES AT VICTORIA PARK

OXFORD AND PETRIE

(B) CIVILIAN PARADE AND BAND CONCERT SPEECHES FROM

MAYOR AND LEADING CITIZENS HORSE RACES DURING AFTERNOON. GENERAL

LIQUOR STORES OPEN ALL DAY ALSO PLACES OF AMUSEMENT, RESTAURANTS.

DEBERT

(A) NIL

(B) NIL

ALDERSHOT

(A) DANCE IN CAMP CIVILIANS INVITED

(B) NIL. NO DISTURBANCES.

NOTE: THIS MESSAGE HAS BEEN DISPATCHED IN CIPHER AND MUST NOT BE PUBLISHED OR DISTRIBUTED
OUTSIDE GOVERNMENT DEPARTMENTS, OR HEADQUARTERS OR RETRANSMITTED WITHOUT BEING PARAPHRASED.

M.F.M. 339 22M-3-44 (4059)
H.Q. 1772-39-2095 K.P. 4465

32158/PB/160237Q AUG 16 COPY 3 ACTION

DEFENSOR

000125

M. F. N. 98
20M-4-H (110)
K. P-763 R.Q. 172

CIPHER

ARMY MESSAGE

(OUTGOING)

FILE

HOC 9142-1

PLACE

DATE

OTEA A ONTARIO

15 AUG 45

GOC-12-C PACIFIC COMMAND
ALL DISTRICT OFFICERS COMMANDING
COMMANDER, CAMP BORDEN
COMMANDER, PETAWANA

AG 0203

SECRET (.)

IN VIEW CERTAIN DISTURBANCES REPORTED AND POSSIBILITY OF
FURTHER OUTBREAKS SUBSEQUENT TO VJ DAY ADDRESSEES ARE REQUESTED TO FWD
SITUATION REPORTS TO REACH ADJUTANT GENERAL BY 2000 HOURS AND 0700 HOURS
OTTAWA TIME INDICATING ANY CELEBRATIONS OR DISTURBANCES ON PART OF A MILITARY
AND OR B CIVIL POPULACE YOUR DISTRICTS (.) REPORTS UNDER THESE TWO HEADS
MAY BE VERY BRIEF AND SHOULD INDICATE DEGREE OF INCIDENTS UNLESS SITUATION
WARRANTS FULLER DETAIL (.) NIL REPORTS ARE REQUIRED (.) REPORT COVERING
16 TO 19 AUG INCL (.) ADDRESSED PACIFIC COMD ALL DISTRICTS AND COMDS
BORDEN AND PETAWANA (.)

ADJUTANT-GENERAL

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MUST BE SENT IN CIPHER

IF THIS MESSAGE IS LIABLE
TO BE PUBLISHED,
INDICATE BELOW

DEGREE OF PRIORITY

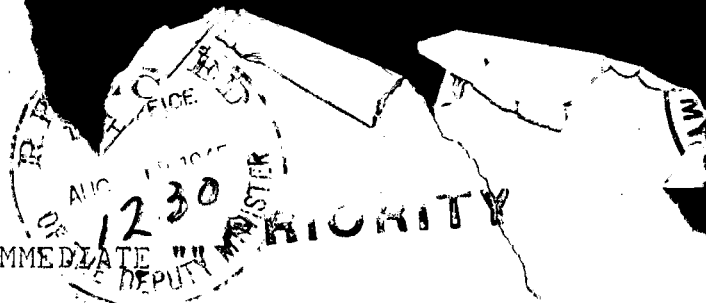
TIME OF ORIG

SIGNED

THIS MESSAGE WILL BE TRANSMITTED IN CIPHER. CONFIRMATION COPIES MUST NOT BE SENT BY MAIL

SINGLE FORM FOR CIPHER MESSAGE

000126



VER V AC NR 39 "" IMMEDIATE ""
FROM COMMANDING SIX HALIFAX NS 13 1249P
TO DEFENSOR
GR 200 BT

G 9083 CONFIDENTIAL IMMEDIATE HALIFAX INCIDENT 12 AUG - AT 2242 HOURS
WORD WAS RECEIVED OF CESSATION OF HOSTILITIES OVER RADIO IMMEDIATELY
SHIPS IN HARBOUR BEGAN SOUNDING SIRENS HORNS AND SEARCHLIGHTS WERE TURNED
ON STOP AT 2245 HOURS PROVOST DETAILS WERE DESPATCHED TO ALL LIQUOR STORES
ACCORDING TO PLAN STOP BY 2330 HOURS LARGE CROWDS HAD GATHERED IN THE
STREETS PARTICULARLY IN FRONT OF THE LIQUOR STORES THESE CROWDS WERE
PREDOMINATELY ~~XXXX~~ CIVILIANS STOP AT 2340 HOURS A CROWD ESTIMATED AT 150
LED BY CIVILIANS ATTEMPTED TO BREAK INTO HOLLIS STREET LIQUOR STORE STOP
THE ATTEMPT WAS UNSUCCESSFUL ALTHOUGH ~~XXXX~~ WINDOWS WERE BROKEN BY STONES
STOP ARRESTS WERE MADE BY CIVILIAN POLICE NO ARMY PERS WERE ~~IN~~ INVOLVED
AT 2355 HOURS PROVOST INSTRUCTED ALL ARMY PERS ON STREET TO RETURN TO
BARRACKS AND QUARTERS STOP AT 0200 HOURS ADDITIONAL PATROLS ~~70~~ AND
RESERVES STOOD DOWN WITH EXCEPTION OF DETAILS AT LIQUOR STORES STOP STREET
AT THAT TIME BEING CLEAR OF CIVILIANS AND SERVICE PERS STOP CONFERENCE
BEING HELD 1430 HOURS TO-DAY MAYOR AND HEADS OF SERVICES

(3) Day (B) 13/1505
BT 13 1300P EB

K

A.G.

Lo note please

59145

13/8/45. A. Ross Wm

000127

THIS

IF INFO

8-1-1

BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE

000128

VER V-46 NR 38 "" IMMEDIATE "" PRIORITY

FROM COMMANDING SIX HALIFAX NNS 13 1242P

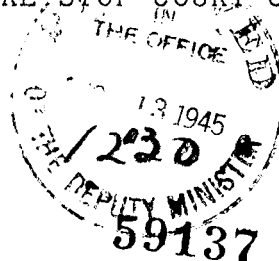
TO DEFENSOR

GR 164 BT "" IMMEDIATE "" PRIORITY

G 9097 CONFIDENTIAL REFERENCE KENTVILLE INCIDENT AUG ON FALSE REPORT
CESSATION OF HOSTILITIES BEING BROADCAST STOP FIRE ALARM WAS PULLED IN
ALDERSHOT CAMP TROOP IMMEDIATELY TURNED OUT AND GROUP OF APPROX 400
PROCEEDED TO MOVE ON KENTVILLE WITH THE INTENTION OF SECURING BEER FROM
THE LIQUOR STORE STOP EFFORTS OF OFFICERS IN CAMP TO STOP MEN FROM LEAVING
WERE NOT SUCCESSFUL STOP A STRONG PICQUET OF OFFERS AND NCOS IN TPT REACH
LIQUOR STORE BEFORE MEN ARRIVED AND PREVENTED TROOPS FROM BREAKING INTO
STORE STOP WINDOWS WERE DAMAGED IN LIQUOR STORE AND ADJOINING BLDGS STOP

// PERSUADED MEN TO RETURN TO CAMP WHERE CANTEEN
WAS OPENED AND BEER SUPPLIED TO TROOPS STOP STREETS WERE CLEAR OF TROOPS
BY 0015 HOURS MEN BEING CONVEYED BACK TO CAMP IN TPT STOP NO PROPERTY
IS REPORTED TO HAVE BEEN TAKEN FROM ANY STORE STOP COURT OF ENQUIRY HAS
BEEN CONVENED TO-DAY IN ALDERSHOT

13/15329
BT 13 1247P EB



000129

THIS IS AN ACTION COPY
INCORRECTLY DELIVERED, COMPLETE
BELOW AND RETURN TO A.S.O. WOODS

BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE

000130

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
- Army -

5427-63-7

THE MINISTER

HQS 8695-1 Vol 4 (Adm)

OTTAWA, 14 Aug 45

Situation Report on Disturbances, MD 6
As at 1500 hrs 14 Aug 45

No 184

DOC, MD 6, reports that there has been no recurrence of disturbances at either Halifax or at Aldershot.

2. The Court of Enquiry is sitting at Aldershot. There are approximately 50 witnesses and proceedings are not expected for some days.

3. The situation is in hand and everything is quiet.

[Signature]
(A. E. Walford)
Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION

153

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General	(1)
The Minister, Naval Services	(1)
Minister of National War Services	(1)
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister	(1)
Private Secy to the Prime Minister	(1)
Clerk of the Privy Council	(1)
Dm (Army)	(1)
CGS	(1)
AG	(2)
DPR (Army)	(3)
The Commissioner, RCMP	(1)
Director of Censorship	(1)
DAG(B)	(1)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

-Army-

HQS 8696-1 Vol 4 (Adm)

THE MINISTER

OTTAWA, 13 Aug 45

Situation Report on Disturbances, MD 6
as of 1200 hrs 13 Aug 45

No 182

At about 2200 hrs 12 Aug 45 an announcement was made over the radio that hostilities with Japan had ceased.

2. Immediately, crowds started to gather in the streets in Halifax, at the liquor stores and particularly at the Hollis Street store.

3. There was no report of any damage except at the Hollis Street store where a crowd estimated at 1500 gathered in front of the store. Windows were smashed but the store was not entered. The crowd was quickly dispersed by service police including Provost personnel. About 70% of the crowd were civilians, some few Navy personnel and a few Army personnel.

4. Army personnel are reported to have taken no active part - they were there merely as spectators. Two Naval ratings and three civilians were arrested. The crowds at the other liquor stores were quickly controlled.

5. DCC 6 reports that the Provost Marshal was quickly in touch with the whole situation by means of reports received from service patrols scattered throughout the city and quick and effective action was taken by service police to bring the situation under control. It is stated that the civilian police were of little help. In about three quarters of an hour the situation was completely under control and all service personnel were ordered off the streets.

6. HQ MD 6 reports that the situation now appears to be satisfactory.

7. A further disturbance arose at the same time at Aldershot Camp and Kentville. At about 2300 hrs a false fire alarm was turned in at Aldershot. The men turned out and about 200 of them gathered in the Camp and marched to Kentville.

8. Col McKendrick, Commandant, called his officers and NCOs together and patrols were sent to town to round up the men. The Army personnel, with a number of civilians, had gathered in front of the liquor store. The store was not entered but some windows were smashed. The crowd was quickly dispersed and by 0300 hrs the situation was quiet. The men were picked up in trucks and returned to barracks.

9. A Court of Enquiry to investigate was assembled at Aldershot today.

10. After the men had returned to Camp a free issue of beer was given to them.

- 2 -

11. Press report states that an Army officer at Aldershot had requested the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission to issue free beer to the troops. Col McKendrick stated that no officer was authorized to make such a request.

12. HQ MD 6 reports that the situation now is under control.

Handwritten signature
(A. E. Walford)
Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General	(1)
The Minister, Naval Services	(1)
Minister of National War Services	(1)
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister	(1)
Private Secy to the Prime Minister	(1)
Clerk of the Privy Council	(1)
DM (Army)	(1)
CGS	(1)
AG	(2)
DPR (Army)	(3)
The Commissioner, RCMP	(1)
Director of Censorship	(1)
DAG(B)	(1)

151

(Naval Service)

O/Admin
MEMORANDUM TO ADJUTANT-GENERAL

A. E. WALFORD
Major-General
Adjutant-General

AUG 20 1945

Re: Disturbances - Halifax-Dartmouth, N.S.
7-8 May, 1945.

Reference is made to your minute of 6th August. The 18 volumes constituting the evidence taken before the Royal Commission are in this office. This Department will not have finished considering the proceedings until approximately two weeks from now, at which time I shall be glad to forward them to you. If your need for the proceedings is urgent, we could arrange to let you have them on loan for a few days immediately.

P.R. Hurcomb

(P.R. Hurcomb)
A/Commander (SB) R.C.N.V.R.
JUDGE ADVOCATE OF THE FLEET

150

18th August, 1945.

MEMORANDUM

DJAF

Referred to action by this office.
not been seen by this office.
10.8.45

TO: C N P

~~to the Staff~~

Department of National Defence

HQ HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol.2 (Adm.4(a)2)


Ottawa, 6 Aug 45

Disturbances -
Halifax - Dartmouth NS.
7-8 May 45

May information be given please
as to when copy of the evidence taken before the
Royal Commission, at present with Naval Services,
may be made available to this Directorate.

149

CN 6434 MP


(A. E. Walford),
Major-General,
Adjutant-General.

AUG 11 A.M.

HQ 54-27-63-7 FD 5 (Adm.4(a)2)

Copy placed on Vol.2.

6 Aug 45


District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6,
HALIFAX, NS.

V/E Day Disturbances
A-14 C.I.T.C. CA.
Aldershot NS

Reference HC/120-2-1 (JAG)
14 Jul 45, under cover of which a letter
dated 11 Jul 45 and signed by Col. H.C.
MacKendrick, Commanding A14 C.I.T.C. was
forwarded, para. 6 thereof. 148

2. It is noted that the proceedings
of this Court of Inquiry contain a statement as
to damages caused to property of Dr. R. B. Mulloney
in the amount of \$388.00. No claim however has been
made in respect to these damages.

3. If a claim is made herein same should
be certified in the usual manner and forwarded to
this HQ. Any further claims in connection with the
disturbances at Aldershot NS., Yarmouth NS., Halifax
and Dartmouth NS. should be treated in the same
manner.


(A. E. Walford),
Major-General,
Adjutant-General.

CN/MP

M E M O R A N D U M

To -
D. of ADMIN.

Department of National Defence
H.Q. 54-27-63-7 Vol. 2 (JAG)
OTTAWA, 2 Aug 45

Disturbances
Halifax and Dartmouth, N.S.
7-8 May 45

With reference to your minute of 31 Jul, I was already familiar with the proceedings of the Army Court of Inquiry held to enquire into the marginally noted matter because the DOC, at the request of myself and Mr. O'Donnell, K.C., Counsel for the Department, loaned us a copy for use in connection with the Royal Commission which was held to enquire into said disturbances.

2. The proceedings of the Court of Inquiry do not, in my opinion, disclose anything which would serve as a basis for concluding that the Crown was under any legal liability to pay compensation for the loss or damage which was suffered through said disturbances. On this point I should suppose that inasmuch as the Royal Commission which was established under the Inquiries Act dealt with the disturbances in Halifax and Dartmouth in their broader aspects, as distinct from the Naval, Army and Air Force Courts of Inquiry which dealt with them from the standpoint of the Service concerned, the question of legal liability generally or the payment of compensation on an ex gratia basis would fall for determination by the Government which would base its decision on the report of Mr. Justice Kellock, the Commissioner. In any event it would, in my view, be quite impossible in the circumstances to deal with the question of liability solely from the standpoint of any particular Service. 147

3. With respect to the proceedings of the Military Court of Inquiry and the findings thereof, I suggest that they should be read in the light of the evidence taken before the Royal Commission. A copy of this transcript, comprising some eighteen volumes and costing about \$450, was procured for the Department and is now with the Naval Services who doubtless would make the same available should you require it.

4. In particular, certain of the civilian witnesses whom the Military Court felt with advantage might be examined and whose attendance thereat could not be compelled, were required to give evidence or be in attendance at the Royal Commission which of course took precedence over the Military Court of Inquiry at the same time as the latter was sitting. On my advice, with which the DOC MD 6 concurred, it would have made for confusion, and possibly engendered some ill-feeling, if those parties who had been or would be subjected to strenuous and lengthy examination and cross examination at the Royal Commission were again asked to repeat their evidence or a substantial portion thereof before a Military Court of Inquiry because the evidence which they gave at the Royal Commission would be available to the Department and could be read in conjunction with the testimony of other witnesses taken by the Court of Inquiry.

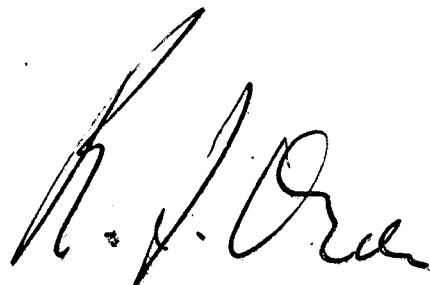
5. In perusing this file I have noted para 2 (c) of AG letter of 4 Jul addressed to DOC 6. While this statement is factually correct, nevertheless the evidence given at the Royal Commission indicated beyond doubt

that .000137

that the obligation, which the Services had agreed to assume in the matter of police protection, as decided at meetings held between the Services and Municipal Authorities, were fulfilled in a greater degree numerically than what had originally been agreed to. The direction or control of the Police Forces, both municipal and Service, were placed in the hands of the Municipal Authorities who, as events demonstrated, proved to be quite incapable of dealing with the task of such magnitude, but this conclusion is something of an ex post facto character.

6. In the light of the evidence given at the Royal Commission, I venture to suggest that any criticism for not organizing joint patrols should, for the reasons mentioned, be directed against the Municipal Authorities and certainly not the DOC 6 who on several occasions during the course of the disturbances took or caused to be taken on his own initiative action by way of detaching personnel of the Provost Corps to meet emergent situations even though this was not in accordance with the agreed plan. On each occasion when such action was taken the evidence indicates that it had some salutary effect.

146



(R.J. Orde) Brigadier,
Judge Advocate-General

RJO/2633



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

In reply quote No. HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol.2
(Adm.4(a)2)
OTTAWA - 31 Jul 45.

TO: J.A.G.

Disturbances - Halifax and Dartmouth NS
7-8 May 45

Reference proceedings of
Court of Inquiry hereunder.

2. For your opinion regarding
Crown liability herein and for any comments
you deem necessary, please.

145
Camil MacDermid
(J. E. MacDermid),
Colonel,
D. of Admin.

CN/MP

000139

IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE

No. HC/120-2-1 (JAG)



CANADA

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

CONFIDENTIAL

Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ontario.

Court of Inquiry - Disturbances
Halifax & Dartmouth, N.S.
7 - 8 May 45.

Headquarters, M. D. No. 6,
Halifax, N.S., 20 July 45-194

Central Registry

NATIONAL DEFENCE.

JUL 25 1945

Chair

Referred to.....

1.
4 Jul 45.

Ref Hq 54-27-63-7 Vol 2, Adm. dated

2. Ref para 2 (a): Only five soldiers were identified as being involved in breaking into premises. Other soldiers who were found in possession of loot claimed to have obtained same from civilians or other soldiers and there was no evidence against them of breaking into. They were charged with being in improper possession of the goods found upon them. Disciplinary action has been taken against twenty-two soldiers in connection with offences during the disturbances 7 - 8 May 45.

Ref para 2 (b): The maintenance of discipline was always a primary consideration. All units were fully aware that any breaches of discipline during the V-E Day celebrations would be very severely dealt with. Exhibit "D" sets forth teletype A-8782 which was sent to all units and para 2 thereof says: "All normal duty must be carried out and security maintained". Para 4 and 5 say: "Essential services will be maintained", "Equipment and property will be safeguarded".

Ref para 2 (c): The policing of the City of Halifax was under the direction of the Chief of Police. He did not request joint services and civil police patrols nor was this suggested by the civic committee in charge of the organization. The services, however, carried out patrols. The Canadian Provost Corps maintained its own patrol during the disturbances. These patrols were four and five strong and covered the city in a D.N.D. truck. The truck was considered more serviceable during the disturbances than the jeep which was ordinarily used for the joint services patrol.

Ref para 2 (d): Exhibit "AA" of the Court of Inquiry sets forth a summary of all breaches of discipline together with the punishments awarded at the time the Court was held. There is attached hereto a supplementary list showing the result of the disciplinary action taken against those who had not been dealt with according to the list set forth in Exhibit "AA".

Ref para 2 (e): All units have been requested to complete forms M.F.B. 371 or the proceedings of Courts of Inquiry in connection with injuries to all personnel as a result of the disturbances which took place on the 7 - 8 May 45. All forms or proceedings which have not yet been forwarded, will be forwarded as soon as received.

3. It is duly noted that this Court of Inquiry is being approved subject to your above referred to letter dated 4 Jul 45.

(D.A. White) Brigadier,
D. O. C., M. D. No. 6.

000140

FALSE DOCKET

H.Q. 54-27-63-7

FALSE DOCKET

No. 7

M.F.E. 387a
450M—11-44 (5891-5948)
H.Q. 1772-39-485

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE, OTTAWA

CROSS REFERENCE

Disturbances, m. d. No 6
C. A. S. F.

OK

F.D.

H.Q. 54-27-63-7

[illegible]

000141

139

000142

adm 4

Mr 4m

MacDermid

MacDERMID
COLONEL
D. of ADMIN.

JUL 25 1945

144

000143

DISCIPLINARY ACTION TAKEN IN RESPECT OF V.E. DAY

DISTURBANCES

21ST. A.A. REGIMENT

B-22710 BQMS Newman, R.
Tried by S.C.M. 5/6/45

First Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, improper
possession: found guilty.
Second Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, taking part
in a disturbance; found not guilty.
Reduced to ranks; 90 days' detention.

C-115024 Gnr. Bordeleau, G.
Tried by S.C.M. 5/6/45

First Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, improper
possession: found guilty.
Second Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, taking part
in a disturbance; found not guilty.
60 days' detention.

A-607247 Gnr. Smorong, E.
Tried by S.C.M. 5/6/45

First Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, improper
possession; found not guilty.
Second Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, taking part
in a disturbance; found not guilty.

C-49603 Gnr. Hutton, M.D.
Tried by S.C.M. 20/6/45

First Charge: Sec 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, improper
possession; found guilty. 141
Second Charge: Sec 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, taking part
in a disturbance; found not guilty.
90 days' detention.

A-11070 Gnr. Toulouse, A.J.
Tried by S.C.M. 20/6/45

First Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, improper
possession; found guilty.
Second Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, taking part
in a disturbance; found not guilty.
90 days' detention.

L-104632 Gnr. Stallard, J.
Tried by O.C. 11/5/45

Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, improper
possession; found guilty.
Fourteen days' C.B., 8 days' pay.

H-616524 Gnr. Tarnowski, P.
Tried by O.C. 6/6/45

Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, unauthorized
passengers in vehicle.

NO. 6 COY., R.C.A.S.C.

F-89640 Pte. Reeves, L.R.
Tried by O.C. 11/5/45

Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, negligent
driving; Application for summary
trial by O.C. forwarded to District
Headquarters 18/7/45.

NO. 6 E.S. & W. COY., R.C.E.

D-640409 Spr. Leduc, O.
Tried by S.C.M. 29/6/45

First Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, improper
possession; found not guilty.
Second Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, taking part
in a disturbance; found not guilty.

106 DEPOT COY., C.W.A.C.

W-6255 Sgt. McLeod, I.B.
Tried by Lieut.-Col. North

Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, in possession
of merchandise; Dismissed.

W-80333 Pte. Sweeney, B.A.
Tried by Lieut.-Col. North

Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, in possession
of merchandise; Dismissed.

NO. 6 ORDNANCE DEPOT, R.C.O.C.

F-82636 Pte. Demers, F.J.
Tried by O.C.

Charge: Sec. 40 A.A.
Conduct to prejudice, unfit for
duty; Dismissed.

REGT. de STE. HYACINTHE

Left District before cases disposed of.

140

MEMORANDUM

ANSWER

To: A.G. (via VAG)

M. NOEL
BRIGADIER
Vice Adjutant-General
To:

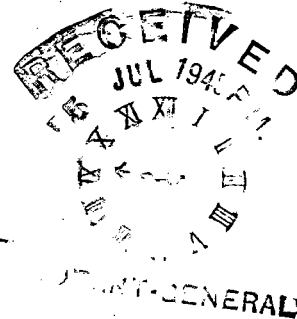
-5 JUL 1945

JUL - 6 1945

Herswith letter to Doc 6
redrafted as per your
direction. I have had
the observations and
comments consolidated
in para 2; direct statements
follow, paras 3, 4, and 5.

As previously recommended,
may this letter be
signed by AG or VAG
in view of the nature
of contents, ie mild
reproof.

W. G. H. Roaf
(W. G. H. Roaf) Brigadier
DAG (B)



DAG/B
Letter signed + returned
for despatch

M. NOEL
BRIGADIER
Vice Adjutant-General
JUL 6 1945

138

000146

HQ 54-27-63-7
Vol 2, Adn.

4 Jul 45.

XXXXXXXXXX
XXXXXXXXXX
District Officer Commanding,
Military District No 6,
HALIFAX, N.S.

Court of Inquiry

Disturbances in Halifax and Dartmouth, N S
7 and 8 May 45.

1. Ref HC 120-2-1 (DOC) 9 Jun 45:-
2. The proceedings of this Court of Inquiry have been reviewed. The following is noted:
 - (a) The evidence identified only five soldiers as being involved in breaking into premises. However, the amount of loot recovered on military premises would seem to indicate that there may have been a greater number concerned.
 - (b) It would appear that, at the DOSC Monday Conferences there had been preliminary discussions regarding V-E Day Celebrations only. The evidence discloses that no definite instructions for the maintenance of discipline during the celebration were issued to the OSC of Units. Was this the case?
 - (c) There was a plan of joint police action in that the various service police forces were to report to the Chief of Police of the City of Halifax. However, it appears that no action was taken to organize joint services and civil police patrols.
 - (d) Twenty-two military personnel were charged by the military authorities under Section 40 of the Army Act for improper possession, 3 with drunkenness, one with drunkenness and use of a vehicle without permission. Six were charged by civil authorities and awarded various sentences. Some of those charged by Military Authorities were remanded for the taking of summary of evidence. An up-to-date report of names, charges laid, sentences awarded should be forwarded to this HQ.
 - (e) Thirty-two patients were treated by medical officers as a result of disturbances which took place on 7-8-9 May 45. It is assumed that the necessary forms MFB 371 or Courts of Inquiry will be forwarded in due course.
3. The Finding of the Court with regard to Lieut A P McCarthy is accepted. Although it is realized that security personnel have as a general rule carried arms while on duty in the Halifax operational area, it is considered that an exception thereto should have been made on V-E Day and during the disturbances due to the existing exceptional conditions.
4. The suggestions and recommendations of the Court are being dealt with following reception of your H165-1-1 (OI/CA) 8 Jun 45. In this respect, although the Army is willing and anxious to co-operate with the civil authorities, the factors mentioned in telegram 0238 should be borne in mind.

137
.....p.t.o.....

5. Subject to the above, this Court is being approved. As only one copy was received, same is being retained at this HQ.

JEM:mw

for *W. E. B. Duff*
(A E Walford)
Major-General,
Adjutant-General.

MEMORANDUM

TO:

VAG(2)

Department of National Defence
(Army)

H.Q. 54-27-63-7 Vol 2 (Adm)

OTTAWA, Ont. 21 Jun 45

Disturbances MD 6

Precis of Court of Inquiry at folios 132,
133 and 134.

2. Draft reply to letter from DOC 6 folios
130 and 131. *in herewith*

3. Explanation as to the failure to take any
definite security action on receipt of the telegram
Ranks 7454 cannot be considered as wholly satisfactory.

4. Notwithstanding the foregoing, it is not
considered that there is anything disclosed in this
Court of Inquiry that warrants any disciplinary action
in respect of HQ MD 6 or of any other person other than
those military personnel who have been found to have
actually participated in the disturbances.

5. In view of this, it is recommended that
the draft letter be signed.

JEM/3518/DTZ

[Signature]
(J.E. MacDermid)
Colonel,
D Adm

21 Jun 45

District Officer Commanding,
Military District No 6,
HALIFAX, N.S.

COURT OF INQUIRY

Disturbances in Halifax and Dartmouth NS
7 and 8 May 45

Ref HC 120-2-1 (DOC) 9 Jun 45.

2. The proceedings of this Court of Inquiry have been reviewed, and the following is noted:-

- (a) The evidence disclosed that only five soldiers were involved in breaking into premises. However, the amount of loot recovered on military premises would seem to indicate that there may have been a greater number concerned.
- (b) It would appear that, at the DOCs' Monday Conferences there had been preliminary discussions regarding V-E Day Celebrations only. The evidence discloses that no definite instructions for the maintenance of discipline during the celebrations were issued to the OSC of Units.
- (c) It is noted that there was a plan of joint police action in that the various service police forces were to report to the Chief of Police of the City of Halifax. However, it appears that no action was taken to organize joint services and civil police patrols.
- (d) This Headquarters concurs in the Finding of the Court with regard to Lt. A.P. McCarthy. Although it is realized that security personnel have as a general rule carried arms while on duty in the Halifax operational area, it is considered that an exception thereto should have been made V-E Day and during the disturbances due to existing exceptional conditions.

3. The suggestions and recommendations are being dealt with following reception of 1-1 (OI/CA) 8 Jun 45. In this respect, although the Army is willing and anxious to co-operate with the authorities, the factors mentioned in tele. be borne in mind.

4. It is noted that 22 military persons were charged by the military authorities under the Army Act for improper possession, 3 were charged with drunkenness and use of a vehicle. Six were charged by civil authorities and given sentences. Some of those charged by military authorities were remanded for the taking of summary. An up-to-date report of names, charges and sentences awarded, be forwarded to this HQ.

- 2 -

5. It is noted that 32 patients were treated medical officers as a result of disturbances which place on 7-8-9 May 45. It is assumed that the necessary forms MFB 371 or Courts of Inquiry will be forwarded due course.

6. Subject to the above, this Court is being ap. v. As only one copy was received, same is being retained this HQ.

JEM/DTZ

(A.E. Walford)
Major-General,
Adjutant-General.

MEMORANDUM

To: D. Admin.

HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol. 2
Adm.4

OTTAWA, Ont. 18 Jun 45

COURT OF INQUIRY

Disturbances in Halifax and Dartmouth N.S.
7 and 8 May 45

PART I

1. Disturbances took place in Halifax and Dartmouth N.S. on 7 and 8 May 45. This occurred principally in the main business sections. Following a general public announcement over the radio at about 1100 hrs. on morning 7 May 45, the public in general and a percentage of service personnel assembled in the downtown sections of Halifax and orderly jubilation reigned, until about 2300 hrs when a large crowd of civilians, allegedly lead by Navy personnel overturned a Police patrol motor vehicle and partly wrecked and burned a street car.
2. The vandalism spread and the crowds attack and partly looted the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission stores on Hollis, Sackville and Buckingham Streets and broke windows of business stores.
3. By about 0230 hrs. 8 May 45 Liquor stores were cleared of all personnel and the crowds were dispersed.
4. The morning of 8 May 45 passed peacefully. However at about 1330 hrs. in the downtown sections of the city crowds composed of civilians and a large number of Navy personnel, and a few Army and Airforce personnel commenced gathering. A series of disorders, the breaking of store windows and doors of liquor stores, merchandise shops and other business establishments took place. This was followed by the looting of the Stores. A downtown brewery, Keith's, was also broken into by the crowd and looted.
5. The looted beer and other liquor was consumed on the streets, in considerable quantity, resulting in a percentage of drunken personnel carrying on with the breaking, entering and looting. The looting was followed by wanton destruction of store equipment and fixtures. The breaking and entry was done mostly by Navy personnel and the looting by civilians and Navy. The evidence edduced shows only 5 soldiers actually involved in breaking into premises. However, the amount of loot recovered on military premises would seem to iddicate that there were a greater number.
6. A disturbance in Dartmouth, N.S. occurred on the afternoon and early evening of 8 May 45, consisting of the breaking, entering and looting of N.S.L.C. store and a few places of business. This affair might be considered as a sequence to the disturbance of Halifax and carried out by similar personnel, who were following the example already seen or participated in at Halifax.

PART II - Military personnel involved in breaches of discipline:

1. A very small number of Army personnel were involved in the disturbances. None were acting in groups or as leaders.
2. Any general infractions of discipline in the nature of simple drunkenness and drinking in public were not dealt with as military or civil offences because such behaviour seemed to be the general practice of those in the downtown areas during the celebrations.

-2-

3. On 7, 8 and 9 May 45, 18 cases of AWL were noted in the Halifax area. 5 were dealt with summarily by the military authorities, of which two were awarded forfeiture of 7 days' pay and 3 awarded forfeiture of 7 days' pay and confined to barracks with extra duties. 2 were awarded forfeiture of 10 days' pay, 1 was awarded 8 days' pay on the first charge and 7 days' pay on second charge; 1 was awarded 10 days' detention. The results of the remaining are not yet known.

4. 22 were charged by the military authorities under Sec. 40 Army Act for improper possession, of which:

- 12 were remanded for Court Martial
- 2 were dealt with summarily
- 1 was awarded 14 days' c.b. and 8 days' f.o.p.
- 4 cases were dismissed,
- 2 were awarded 7 days' f.o.p.
- 1 was awarded 28 days' detention.

5. 3 were charged by military authorities with drunkenness. 1 was charged with drunkenness and using a vehicle without permission. A summary of evidence is being taken in the last case.

- 1 case 14 days' c.b. and 14 days' pay was awarded.
- 1 case 14 days' detention
- 1 case 10 days' detention was awarded.

The other case was remanded for further investigation.

6. The following were dealt with by civil authorities:

- 1 - case, theft of jewellery - awarded 4 years penal servitude.
- 2 - cases illegal possession:
 - 1 awarded 30 days' jail
 - 1 \$100.00 ~~in~~ costs.
- 2 - cases breaking windows:
 - 1 awarded 6 months' jail;
- 1 - case carrying plunder

7. 32 patients were treated by Medical Officers as a result of the disturbances 7, 8 and 9 May 45.

8. All beer, liquor and loot found in possession of Army personnel was confiscated and later delivered the proper authorities.

9. Barracks, and barracks areas were searched and kit inspections were held on 9 May 45. In cases of Army personnel found with beer, liquor or loot, charges were laid where evidence of possession could be proven.

PART III - The Precautions taken prior to and during the disturbances:

1. Telegram ranks 7454 dated 28 Apr 45 (Exhibit "T") contained instructions regarding the observance of and precautions to be put into effect for V-E Day, was received by HQ MD 6 at 0200 hrs² 20 Apr 45.

2. Col. Duncanson, Administrative Officer MD 6, states that no action was taken on receipt of this wire as it was classed "Top Secret", stated that no publicity was to be given and that arrangements were tentative." As a result of this, although the evidence discloses that steps were taken to organize celebration of V.E. Day, no instructions were received by the Units with regard to the maintenance of discipline, outside of barracks.

132
000153

- 3 -

3. It is considered that HQ MD 6 gave no consideration to para. 4 (a) "all normal duties must be properly carried out and security should be maintained." It must be stated, however, that this lack of action on the part of HQ MD 6 was stated by the Court, was not a contributing factor to the disturbances in Halifax or Dartmouth.

4. On the morning of 8 May 45, following the disturbances, which occurred the previous night, no definite steps were taken to prevent a recurrence. This non-action is due to the lack of co-ordination between the various services and civilian authorities in Halifax.

5. It is noted the evidence disclosed that although it was suggested by the President of N.S.L.C. Stores, Halifax, that canteens and messes be closed on V.E. Day, such action was not taken by military authorities on the basis that some recreation should be given the troops, in their lines, in order to keep them there as much as possible.

With the 55,000 floating population in Halifax at the time of the disturbance, the question was raised as to whether closing the messes and canteens would not have been preferable.

6. Although on 5 Apr 45 at a meeting held at Police HQ it was agreed that there be a pooling of various Police forces at the Halifax Police station, it does not seem that any action was taken to organize combined civil, military, naval and airforce police patrols, to walk through the main arteries of the downtown section of the city and by their presence at the scene of any trouble prevent breaking-in and the subsequent looting.

The Court states that no definite action was taken by the military authorities in this regard, in deference to the seniority of the Naval Commander. The evidence further discloses that the Halifax Police Force was inadequate in numbers.

RECOMMENDATIONS:

1. The Court recommends that consideration be given to the possibility of instructions being issued by NDHQ to all concerned which would ensure adequate arrangements and plans be made to meet possible disturbances of a serious nature in districts or areas where service personnel are stationed.

2. In this respect, may it be pointed out that combined civil, military, naval and airforce police were used in Montreal, P.Q. last Fall in connection with "zoot suit" riots which occurred in that city, with immediate results. These results, it is submitted, justify consideration of using combined patrols in mass disturbances involving service personnel.


(Yves Bernier) Colonel,
Admin 4.

CN/VC

No. HC 120-2-1 (DOC)



CANADA

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

~~SECRET~~

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,
Halifax, N.S. 9 Jun 1945

Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ontario.

Central Registry

NATIONAL DEFENCE

54-27-63-7 FD3
JUN 12 1945

Charge.....

Referred to... *Stelm...*

COURT OF INQUIRY

DISTURBANCES IN HALIFAX AND DARTMOUTH, N.S.
7 AND 8 MAY 45

The proceedings of this Court of Inquiry are herewith enclosed. A second copy, however, has been handed to Brigadier R.J. Orde, of the J.A.G. as he requires same in connection with the Royal Commission now sitting in Halifax.

" The findings of the Court are very extensive, and although I concur in some of the findings, I feel that a number of them require my opinion and explanation as Convening Officer and as D.O.C., M.D. No. 6.

2. The first fourteen paragraphs of the findings, referring to "Time, Place and Nature of Such Disturbances", set forth quite fairly and accurately what happened.

3. The second sub-heading, "Whether any Military Personnel were Involved, etc.", sub-para 15 to 20 are concurred in except that paragraph 16 is rather misleading. It refers to looting by soldiers, and participation by soldiers in consuming and carrying away beer and liquor. This does not conform with paragraph 10 of the findings, which shows that there were only five soldiers involved in breaking into premises.

4. (a) Sub-heading III of the findings "Precautions Taken Prior to Such Disturbances", is also misleading. Paragraphs 22 and 23 thereof are in conflict. In paragraph 22 it is pointed out that at the D.O.C's Monday Conferences there had been preliminary discussions regarding V-E Day, and in Paragraph 23 it says no action was taken by Headquarters, M.D. No. 6. Action was taken, and all M.D. No. 6 Staff Officers, Heads of Services and representatives of Halifax Fortress were fully informed at the D.O.C's Conference of all the discussions and of the tentative arrangements which were made.

(b) Paragraph 25 of the findings sets forth the lack of orders from Headquarters, M.D. No. 6 before 7 May 45 resulting in a considerable amount of confusion and uncertainty in the units as to what was expected of them. This finding is misleading because as the evidence indicates all the units in and about Halifax had been made fully aware of what to expect and what was expected of them in respect of V-E Day. This had been effected through the several discussions and conferences which had been held previously and at which such units were represented by responsible officers.

.....P.T.O.

(c) Paragraph 26 is incorrect, as every unit was equally aware, with Headquarters, M.D. No. 6, of the instructions that should be issued, and all had an equal amount of time to permit the planning of precautions, celebrations and Thanksgiving Services. This is confirmed by Paragraph 27, which says most units had made these adequate plans.

5. Sub-heading IV of the findings, "Action Taken During the Disturbances". These findings show that the necessary precautions must have been made beforehand in order that the action which was taken was able to be carried out.

6. (a) Sub-heading V of the findings, "Action Taken Afterwards to Insure Against Repetition". The Canadian Provost Corps in this district did excellent work. Paragraph 39 reflects indirectly upon the Provost Corps in that the disturbances on the night of the 7 - 8 May 45 were not reported until about 1000 hours on the 8 May 45. This knowledge, of course, was general as it was broadcast in the early morning news as well as published in the early morning paper, and the proceedings also show that no Army personnel were engaged in this breaking and looting of the liquor stores.

(b) Paragraph 41 says immediate action was indicated, which was not taken. This action was taken, and the Canadian Provost Corps were the first to send a strong detachment of additional provost downtown.

7. (a) Sub-heading VI, "Suggestions and Recommendations, etc.", paragraph 43 says there was no plan of joint police action, but this is not so as the evidence clearly shows that detachments of the three services, Provost Corps, Shore Patrol and Special Police were detailed and reported to the Chief of Police of the City of Halifax, who had a Liaison Officer with him at his headquarters from all three services and he would be supplied with personnel whenever he requested assistance.

(b) Paragraph 47 is also misleading as the seniority of the Naval Commander did not hold back the Army from making all necessary arrangements with units under this command or from supplying the necessary Provost Corps to the City Police.

(c) In Paragraph 50 the criticism against Lieut. A.P. McCarthy is not deserved as Security Personnel have as a general rule carried arms while on duty in this operational area; in fact on most occasions the nature of their duties was such as to make it expedient for them to be armed.

8. (a) Sub-heading VII, "Suggestions and Recommendations, etc.", Paragraph 51 is a suggestion of the Court regarding unified command, and is a policy which should be given consideration.

(b) Paragraph 52, however, is not correct in fact, as there was not a lack of co-ordinated planning. All three Armed services detailed strong patrols from its Service Police under the direction of competent officers who were directly responsible to carry out all requests from the Chief of Police of the City of Halifax, who was the officer charged with the maintenance of order in this city, and he was rendered every assistance by the three Armed Services on request.



CANADA

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

Page 3

9 Jun 1945

(c) The facts are that plans had been made in advance for co-ordinating the Service Police duties on V-E Day. The Chief of Police was fully aware of such plans and agreed with them as the City Police were integrated therewith. The plan was to go into operation as soon as V-E Day officially commenced, this would have been 8 May. Nevertheless, when the City authorities decided to have their own V-E Day at 1100 hours 7 May, i.e. some 24 hours prior to the official day, the plan was immediately put into operation and so far as the Army Provost were concerned the arrangements as provided in the plan were carried out to an extent beyond that which the plan called for and to which the Chief of the City Police had agreed.

9. Sub-heading VII (3) Paragraph 54. The same remarks as re 52 apply to this paragraph and also apply to Paragraphs 55 and 56.

(D.A. White) Brigadier,
District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6.

FALSE DOCKET

FALSE DOCKET

H.Q. 54-27-63-7.

No. 3

M.F.B. 387a
450M-11-44 (5891-5948)
H.Q. 1772-39-485

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE, OTTAWA

CROSS REFERENCE

*Disturbances, N. D.
No. 6, C.A.S.T.*

OK

(If purpose for which referred cannot be expressed on one line, add minute to file
and enter here "With Minute")

Steam

With Papers C.R. JUN 12 1942

Count proceedings

127
000158

L. action

VER AC NR 87

FROM LOC MD SIX HFX NS 12 1400P

TO DEFENSOR

GR 48 BT

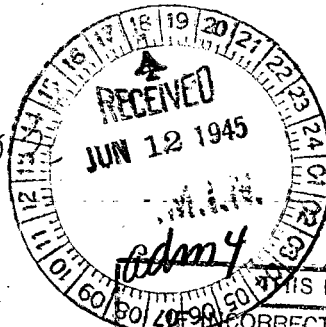
54-27-63-7 Vol 2



A 2701 RE RANKS 9965 STOP PROCEEDINGS OF COURT OF INQUIRY HELD AT
 HALIFAX FORWARDED BY MAIL SATURDAY STOP PROCEEDINGS OF COURT
 OF INQUIRY FOR KENTVILLE AND YARMOUTH HAVE BEEN RETURNED FOR
 FURTHER INFORMATION AND WILL BE FORWARDED AS SOON AS
 SATISFACTORY

BT12 1801P EC B

12/70



56975

THIS IS AN ACTION COPY

CORRECTLY DELIVERED, COMPLETE
 BELOW AND RETURN TO A.S.O. G15 WOODS

BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE

[Handwritten signature]

BOOK OF THREE

1280
000159

YB/1D
ARMY MESSAGE
(OUTGOING)

CLEAR

FILE HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol.2
(Adm 4)

PLACE

DATE

OTTAWA ONT - 11 JUN 45

DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING
MILITARY DISTRICT NO 6
HALIFAX N.S.

RANKS 9965

REF FILE HC/120-2-1 H150-1-2 AND RANKS 8352 DATED 12 MAY 45 (C) INFORM AS TO
HOW MATTER STANDS AND WHEN PROCEEDINGS OF COURT OF INQUIRY RE DISTURBANCES
MAY BE EXPECTED

ADJUTANT-GENERAL

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MAY BE SENT AS WRITTEN BY ANY MEANS		DEGREE OF PRIORITY	TIME OF ORIGIN
EXCEPT INCLUDING {	WIRELESS	<i>[Signature]</i> A.E. Walcott Major-General Adjutant-General	1805
SIGNER			

COPY 2

129
000160

ARMY MESSAGE

(OUTGOING)

CLEAR

FILE

HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol.2
(ADH 4)

PLACE

DATE

OTTAWA ONT - 31 MAY 45

DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING
MILITARY DISTRICT NO 6
HALIFAX N S

RANKS 9466 - RETEL A533 DATED 24 MAY AUTHORITY GRANTED FOR MAJOR-GENERAL A C
SPENCER BRIG A R ROY LIEUT-COLONEL M H TOY LIEUT-COLONEL E A CHATER AND
MAJOR L C GARROLL TO DRAW A SPECIAL ALLOWANCE AT THE RATE SET OUT IN THE FIRST
COLUMN OF ARTICLE NINETY P & A REGS FOR A PERIOD NOT EXCEEDING THIRTY DAYS FROM
13 MAY 45 (C) IT IS NOTED FROM TELEGRAM A533 THAT RECOMMENDATION NOT MADE FOR
BRIG ROY (C) IF BRIG ROY WAS NOT IN FIRST INSTANCE IN RECEIPT OF ALLOWANCES
UNDER ARTICLE NINETY P & A REGS THIS AUTHORITY WOULD NOT APPLY TO HIM

ADJUTANT-GENERAL

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MAY BE SENT AS WRITTEN BY ANY MEANS	DEGREE OF PRIORITY	TIME OF ORIGIN
EXCEPT INCLUDING { <u>WIRELESS</u>	<i>Important</i>	<i>1800</i>
SIGNER: <i>A. E. Walford</i> Major-General Adjutant-General		

COPY 2

1000 000161

4B

ORIGINAL COPY		
DELIVERED, COMPLETE BELOW AND RETURN TO: A.S.O. 515 WOODS		
BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE



Adm J

31

VER V AC NR 1

FROM CMDG SIX HALIFAX NS 310910P

TODEFENSOR OTTAWA

GR 52 BT

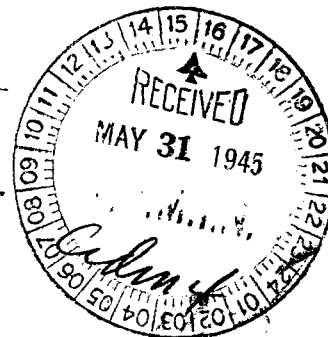
A 1335 RE TEL A 533 DATED 23 MAY 45 STOP HAS RECOMMENDATION TO CONTINUE TRAVELLING ALLOWANCES AT A HIGHER RATE TO COMPLETION OF COURT INQUIRY FOR MAJOR GENERAL SPENCER MAJOR CARROLL LT COL M H TOY AND LT COL E A CHATER RECEIVED APPROVAL

BT 310912P KHK

3108900

L.C.

70641



000162

MEMORANDUM

Department of National Defence

H.Q. 54-27-63-7 Vol 2 (DAG(B))

OTTAWA, 29 May 45

AG

COURT OF INQUIRY
Halifax Disturbance

Maj-Gen Spencer infm me at 1210 hrs
29 May 45 that the Court has now completed
taking evidence and that the Court reporters
are putting the proceedings together.

2. He also stated that the Court is
working on their Findings and expect to return
to Ottawa on or about June 3rd.

Dadur

For infm

G.A. Ferguson
G. A. FERGUSON
BRIGADIER
D.A.G. (B)

G.A. Ferguson

(G.A. Ferguson)
Brigadier
D.A.G. (B)

GAF:VB

MAY 29 1945

RA
MAY 29 1945

000163

ARMY MESSAGE

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

CLEAR

(OUTGOING)

FILE

(Adm 4)

PLACE

DATE

OTTAWA CNT - 30 MAY 45

DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING
MILITARY DISTRICT NO 6,
HALIFAX N S

RAIR 9407

RETEL A 1216 DATED 29 MAY MATTER WITH DM DECISION SHOULD BE ARRIVED AT SHORTLY
WILL REPLY IMMEDIATELY BY WIRE

ADJUTANT-GENERAL

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MAY BE SENT AS WRITTEN BY ANY MEANS

DEGREE OF PRIORITY

TIME OF ORIGIN

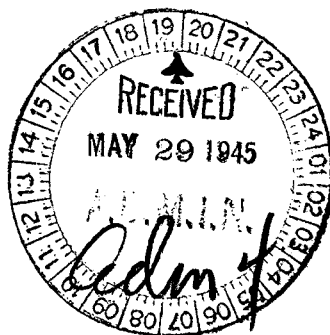
EXCEPT
INCLUDING } WIRELESS

SIGNED _____
(A.E. Malford)
Major-General
Adjutant-General

1570

COPY 4 FOR ORIGINATOR'S FILE

123
000164



△ TE

VER V AC NR 157
FROM COMMANDING SIX HALIFAXN S 291715P
TO DEFENSOR
GR 52 BT

THIS IS AN ACTION COPY IF INCORRECTLY DELIVERED, COMPLETE BELOW AND RETURN TO A.S.O. C15 WOODS		
BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE

A 1216 RE TEL RANK 8975 DATED 22 MAY 45 REPLY REQUESTE
MY A 533 DATED 23 MAY 45 REFERS EXTENTION OF TRAVELLING ALLOWANCES
AT HIGHER RATES TO MAJOR GENERAL SPENCER MAJOR CARROL LT COL TOY
AND LT COL CHATER

BT 29 1956P MP B

55513
54-27-13-7 VOL.2 PMB 18-5

9407

122

000165

MEMORANDUM

Department of National Defence

TO: DEPUTY MINISTER (ARMY)

HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol. 2 (Adm 4)

Ottawa, 25 May 45

DISTURBANCES - V-E Day
M.D. 6.

1. The purpose of this submission is to recommend that pursuant to Art 208 FR & I and Art 94 Pay & Allowance Regs., authority be given for special allowances for the officers on a Court of Inquiry now sitting at Halifax, N.S.

2. The facts are as follows:

(a) A Court of Inquiry, composed of Major-General A.C. Spencer as president, Brigadier A.R. Roy, Lt-Col. M.H. Toy and Lt-Col. E.A. Chater as members and Major L.C. Carroll as legal advisor to the Court, is sitting now at Halifax since 13 May 45 for the purpose of inquiring into and reporting upon the circumstances connected with disturbance of the peace, involving Army personnel in the City of Halifax and Dartmouth, N.S. on or about V-E Day, 7 May 45.

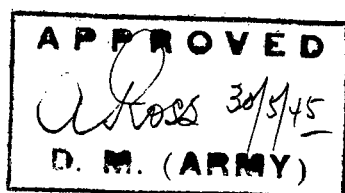
(b) Pursuant to Art 90 Pay & Allowance Regs., these officers are entitled to special allowances as set out in said Art 90 at a certain rate for a period not exceeding 15 days and at a lower rate for any period in excess of 15 days.

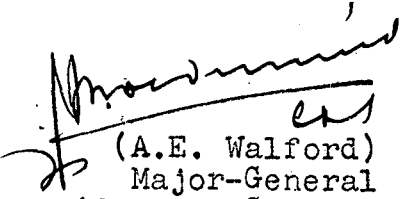
(c) A request has been received from the DOC MD 6 that full rate of allowances be continued for any period in excess of 15 days.

2. In view of the circumstances, the request of DOC MD 6, is considered reasonable.

3. It is recommended that pursuant to Art 208 FR & I and Art 94 Pay & Allowance Regs., the above mentioned officers be authorized to draw a special allowance at the rate set out in the first column of Art 90 Pay & Allowance Regs., for a period not exceeding 30 days from 13 May 45.

YB/nr




(A.E. Walford)
Major-General
Adjutant-General



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY
INTER-OFFICE CORRESPONDENCE

OTTAWA, Canada,

29th May, 1945.

D. Admin.
(Through Q.M.G.)

Disturbances - V-E Day
M.D. 6

1. Reference your Minute of the 25th instant relative to submission to the Deputy Minister in respect of continuation of higher rates of travelling allowance for the officers composing a Court of Inquiry presently being held at Halifax, this Branch is prepared to concur in submission in view of the fact that the District Officer Commanding, Military District No.6 advises that hotel accommodation only is available and having in mind the high cost of living which prevails in that area.

A. R. Mortimore *to Coe*
(A.R. Mortimore) Brigadier,
PAYMASTER-GENERAL.

DH/

120

P.M.J.

Do you concur in
proposed submission
here

for Bernier
for
YVES BERNIER
LIEUT. COLONEL
ADMINISTRATION (49)

MAY 24 1945

*Hester return
for Bernier*

G. A. FICOUX
CHADIER
G.A.G. (B)

MAY 28 1945 119

000168

L. Colm
VER W C NR 12

FROM COMMANDING SIX HALIFAX 240950P

TO DEFENSOR

GRS 51 BT



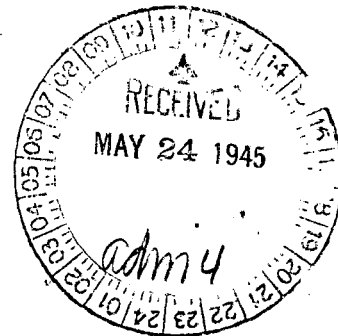
54-27-63-7 Vol 2

A 533 RETEL RANKS 8975 DATED 22 MAY 45 RECOMMENDATION TO CONTINUE
TRAVELLING ALLOWANCES AT THE HIGHER RATE TO COMPLETION OF COURT
OF INQUIRY APPLIES TO MAJOR GENERAL SPENCER MAJOR CARROLL
LT-COL M H TOY AND LT-COL E A CHATER

BT 241045P

WG

B



65426

THIS IS AN ACTION COPY		
IF INCORRECTLY DELIVERED, COMPLETE BELOW AND RETURN TO A.S.O. G15 WOODS		
BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE

PI
000169



315111

Degraded
Hooper
IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE
No. HC/120-2-1
CONFIDENTIAL
G. A. FERGUSON
BRIGADIER
C.A.G. (S)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,
Halifax, N.S., 15 May 1945.

Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
OTTAWA, Ontario.

Discipline V-E Day
Defended Port of Sydney

CENTRAL REGISTRY Army
CONF. SEC.
e 9142-1
MAY 18 1945
File.....
Chgd. to *Admin 5-11-45*
Referred to *9.24*

The attached report from the Commanding,
Defended Port of Sydney, on the marginally noted sub-
ject, is forwarded for your information.

Disadv.
Noted - please advise
main file re
disturbance
in M.D. 6.
G. A. FERGUSON
BRIGADIER
C.A.G. (S)

MAY 21 1945

D. A. White
(D. A. WHITE) Brigadier,
District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6.

117

CANADIAN ARMY

S.F.20-1-4

H.Q., Defended Port of Sydney,
Sydney, N.S., 13 May, 1945.

Headquarters,
Military District No. 6,
Halifax, N.S.

DISCIPLINE - V-E DAY
Defended Port of Sydney

M. D. No. 6

1. In anticipation of V-E Day the Area Commander, N.O.I.C., and O.C., R.C.A.F., Sydney, met on 3 Mar 45 and discussed action to be taken if the war were to end suddenly and our decisions and recommendations submitted to the Mayor of Sydney. Frequent interchange of views and agreements on unified action were made from time to time in conjunction with the City Police, R.C.M.P., Naval Shore Patrol and Provost Corps. Officers Commanding units were informed of procedure to follow during the Area Commander's Monday morning conferences and instructions, copy of which is attached, were forwarded to Officers Commanding, all units.
2. Immediately following the announcement of V-E day short religious services were conducted by the Army Chaplains after which canteens were thrown open and the men encouraged to celebrate quietly and all Officers remained with their men.
3. At the first sign that a disturbance was brewing in Sydney, the Provost Corps and unit N.C.Os. were despatched to the City area and instructed all Army personnel to proceed directly to their homes or return to Barracks. This was done without incident.
4. Major disturbances occurred in Sydney and New Waterford and in neither instance were Army personnel involved.
5. The Sydney disturbance involved Navy personnel and civilians on the nights of May 8th and 9th and the Provost Detachment was on hand but did not participate as there were sufficient Naval Shore Patrol available to handle the situation. However, as it became more serious all available Provost personnel moved to the City Police Station to be available if detailed individually as citizens by Civil Police.
6. During the disturbance at New Waterford, 9th May, all available Provost personnel and 2 Officers and 30 Other Ranks R.C.A. assisted the R.C.M.P., not as Army or Provost personnel but as citizens. In addition to the assistance given by the Provost Detachment 100 picked men of the 16th Coast Regt., R.C.A. and 50 from the Regt. de St. Hyacinthe, were standing by ready to assist if called upon, however, this was not necessary as the situation did not become serious enough.

15 1045

RECEIVED TO

-000172-

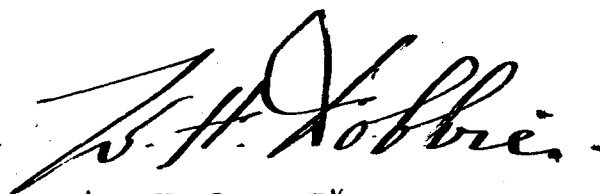
7. Assistance was rendered the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission by removing remaining quantity of stores from locations that had been broken into and also from stores that were considered in danger.

8. There were no disturbances in the Mulgrave - Canso Section. Entertainments were arranged, dances held and the entire populace conducted themselves in a manner which is to be commended.

9. Considerable credit is due Capt. W.R. Luke, of No. 45 Provost Coy., C.Pro.C., for the manner in which he and his men handled Army personnel who might have become involved and for the invaluable assistance rendered to local Police and R.C.M.P.

10. All Unit Commanders co-operated to the fullest extent in preventing Army personnel becoming involved.

11. Provost reports, copies of which are on file at your Headquarters, give in detail particulars of all disturbances in this area.



(W. H. DOBBIE) Colonel,
Commanding Defended Port of Sydney.

ENCL.

C
O
P
Y

S.F. 16-1-9

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

ARMY

H.Q., Defended Port of Sydney,
Sydney, N.S., 29 Apr 45.

Officers Commanding,
All Units,
Defended Port of Sydney Area.

DISCIPLINE

Cessation of Hostilities.

In event of cessation of hostilities with
Germany being officially announced the following procedure
will be followed:-

1. All ranks are to be warned that discipline is to be tightened up rather than relaxed.
2. Operational role will not be relaxed until authorized from this H.Q.
3. Only authorized percentages of passes will be given with preference to personnel stationed close to home.
4. Only essential Railway Warrants will be issued on the day the announcement is made.
5. Units should arrange to have their own supervised celebrations and Officers will set an example by remaining with their men.

Further orders will be passed as necessary.

Sgd.(W.H.Dobbie) Colonel,
Commanding Defended Port of Sydney.

114

ARMY MESSAGE

(OUTGOING)

CLEAR

FILE: HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol.2

PLACE

DATE

(ADM 4)

OTTAWA ONT - 22 MAY 45

DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING
MILITARY DISTRICT NO 6,
HALIFAX N.S.

RANKS 8975 - RETEL A367 DATED 22 MAY INFORM WHETHER YOUR RECOMMENDATION APPLIES
TO OTHER OFFICERS OF COURT THAN MAJOR GENERAL SPENCER AND MAJOR CARROLL
IF SO FORWARD NAMES

ADJUTANT-GENERAL

113

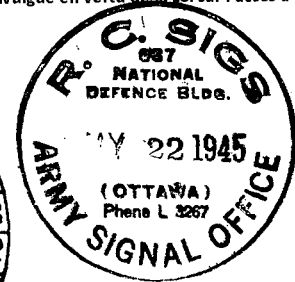
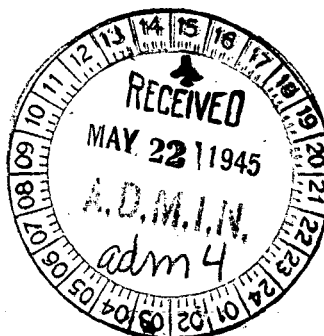
ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MAY BE SENT BY ANY MEANS EXCEPT INCLUDING { <u>WIRELESS</u> } SIGNED _____	<u>(A.E. Walford)</u> Major-General Adjutant-General	DEGREE OF PRIORITY IMPORTANT	TIME OF ORIGIN 1800 hrs
---	--	--	----------------------------

COPY 3

admn

54-27-63-7 Vol 2



VER V AC NR 60

TE
FROM COMMANDING SIX HALIFAX 221150P

TO DEFENSOR

GRS 58 BT

A 367 AS IT WILL BE NECESSARY FOR OFFICERS ON COURT OF INQUIRY HALIFAX
DISTURBANCES TO REMAIN LONGER THAN 15 DAYS AND HOTEL ACCOMMODATION ONLY
IS AVAILABLE AUTHORITY REQUESTED TO CONTINUE TRAVELLING ALLOWANCES AT
HIGHER RATE TO COMPLETION OF COURT UNDER PROVISIONS ART 94 (1) P AND A
REP 1937

*OK
11
NO*

BT 221255P

WG

221220 Q

B THIS IS AN ACTION COPY		
IF INCORRECTLY DELIVERED, COMPLETE		
BELOW AND RETURN TO A.S.O. 615 WOODS		
BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE

63921

112

Adm 4.

No action for
Adm 1.

Understand
you wish this
file please.

F.D. Hallis Cap
for Adm 1.
22 May 75.


Action 1.

(Adm 1 (a) (3)) -

Ref your Memo (3)
dated 22 May 45: -

2. No further action
required from this
Section (Adm 3.)

3. Considered that
any further action is
responsibility of Adm 1.



E. G. Thompson
Lt. - Col.
Adm. 3

MAY 22 1945

000178

110

Adm 3:

Ref Min 1 and 2.

Doc WD 6 Telegram

A 388 is addressed
to Cude Baden and
states that Provost
personnel are being
returned.

Presume no further
action required by
Adm 1 please.

F.D. Hollis's Capt
for A. P. Spanght Col
Adm. 1.

22 May 75.

119
000179

10A4(B)

212 212 212
Dike

54-27-63-7 Vol 2



VER V AC NRS 58-59

FROM COMMANDING SIX HALIFAX 221150P

TO ~~COMMANDER CAMP BORDEN ONT~~

DEFENSOR (ATTENTION BRIG FERGUSON)

GRS 45 BT



Adm 3 9-5

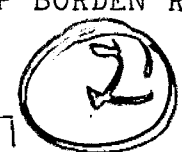
A 388 FOUR OFFICERS AND FIFTY SIX OTHER RANKS CDN PROVOST CORPS
RETURNING TO BORDEN LEAVE HALIFAX 1920 HOURS 22 MAY ARRIVING CAMP
BORDEN 1210 HOURS 24 MAY STOP ADDSD COMDR CAMP BORDEN RPTD DEFENSOR

BT 221304P

2 212.280

H

WG		B
WLETE		WOODS
SIGNATURE		



Adm.
Frackson
63920
G. A. FERGUSON
BRIGADIER
C.A.G. (B)

MAY 22 1945

000180

H. Adm.

Called Maj.
Hollingsworth (PM6)
and read my wire
to him. He stated
it was proper
action to take.

Y. B. Hallis Capt
for A. P. Sprague Lt Col
Adm 1.

19 May. 45.

ARMY MESSAGE

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

CLEAR

(OUTGOING)

FILE 54-27-83-7
vol 2 Adm 1(a)3

PLACE

DATE

OTTAWA, Ontario. 19 May 45.

Commander,
Camp Borden Military Camp,
CAMP BORDEN, Ontario.

District Officer Commanding,
Military District No 6,
HALIFAX, N.S.

RANKS 8819

RETEL CMDG SIX A59 MAY NINETEENTH ALSO ADDSD
CMDR BORDEN REFERS FOUR OFFICERS AND FIFTY
SIX ORS PROVOST PERSONNEL ATTACHED 37 PROVOST
COY stop CMDR BORDEN TO FORWARD PAY BY CHEQUES
IN TIME FOR PAY PERIODS AS THEY OCCUR stop
ADDSD CMDR BORDEN RPTD CMDG SIX

ADJUTANT-GENERAL

FDH/AS

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MAY BE SENT AS WRITTEN BY ANY MEANS

EXCEPT INCLUDING } WIRELESS

SIGNED *For Col, D. Adm. Fortholmes Capt*

DEGREE OF PRIORITY

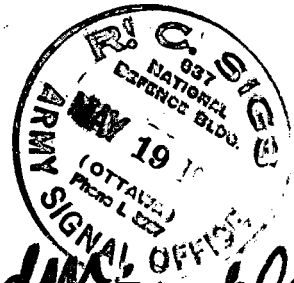
IMPORTANT

TIME OF ORIGIN

1710

COPY 4 FOR ORIGINATOR'S FILE

000182



*Daduc
Fracturpl.
L. Ferguson*

G. A. FERGUSON
BRIGADIER
D.A.G. (B)
1530 hrs
MAY 19 1945

VER V AC NR 50-51 *(P)*
FROM CMDG SIX HALIFAX NS 191140P

TO DEFENSOR

TO ~~CMDR CAMP BORDEN MIL CAMP~~ CAMP BORDEN ONTARIO
73
GR *72* BT

A-59 REF CONVERSATION BRIG FERGUSON-COL DUNCANSON

STOP OWING TO NECESSITY OF RETAINING FOUR OFFICERS FIFTY SIX

OR'S C PRO C PERSONNEL ON LOAN FROM CAMP BORDEN PENDING COMPLETION OF

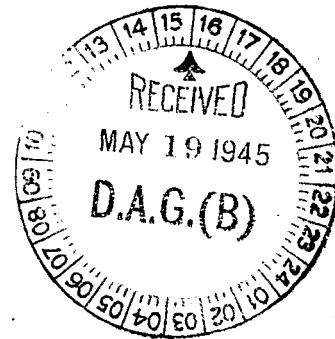
ENQUIRYS INTO RECENT DISTURBANCES IN THIS CITY MAY INSTRUCTIONS BE

ISSUED TO MAKE PROVISION FOR RECEIPT OF PAY STOP AT PRESENT THESE

PERSONNEL ARE ATTACHED FOR ALL PURPOSES EXCEPT PAY STOP

ADDSD DEFENSOR RPTD CMDR CAMP BORDEN

BT 191302P BE B



141-2580-13

THIS IS AN ACTION COPY		
IF INCORRECTLY DELIVERED, COMPLETE BELOW AND RETURN TO A.S.O. 615 WOODS		
BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE

62636

*#054-27-63-7 Vol 2
Ranks 8568 of 16 May 45*

106
000183

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

- Army -

HQS 8696-1 FD 14 (DAG(B))

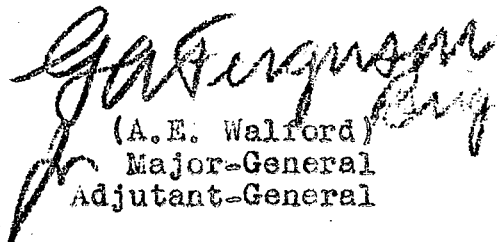
THE MINISTER

OTTAWA, 17 May 45

SITUATION REPORT ON DISTURBANCES
as of 1130 hours 17 May 45

NO 166

1. Ref Sit Rep No 165 regarding disturbances in Nova Scotia.
2. The ~~Off~~ 1/c Administration MD 6 reported by tele at 1045 hrs 17 May 45 that there have been no new disturbances since those ref to in previous Sit Reps.
3. The 1000 Army personnel ref to in para 7 of Sit Rep No 160 have been returned to their home station and have been replaced by a det of 200 All Ranks who have been located at a point near Halifax. The 60 members of C Pro C ref to in para 8 of Sit Rep No 162 still remain under the command of the DOC MD 6.
4. Courts of Inquiry inquiring into the minor disturbances at Kentville and Yarmouth are proceeding and the Court, under the presidency of Major-General A C Spencer, CBE, ED, is making preliminary inquiries into the sit before commencing to hear the evidence of witnesses at Halifax and Dartmouth.
5. It is not considered that further Sit Reps will be issued in connection with these disturbances unless the necessity arises.


(A.E. Walford)
Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION:

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General	(1)
The Minister, Naval Services	(1)
Minister of National War Services	(1)
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister	(1)
Private Secy to the Prime Minister	(1)
Clerk of the Privy Council	(1)
DM (Army)	(1)
CGS	(1)
AG	(2)
DPR(Army)	(3)
The Commissioner R.C.M.P.	(1)
Director of Censorship	(1)

OTTAWA JOURNAL MAY 17 1945

Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Press Index Section

RETURN TO
Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Room 402, Laurentian Building

THE HALIFAX RIOTS.

Sir:—I see in today's Journal you have published an extract from the Halifax Herald, the "Law of the Navy". May it be pointed out that there were riots in the other parts of Nova Scotia; Whitney Pier, New Waterford, Reserve, Dominion, Liverpool and Yarmouth, where there were few, if any, sailors. The Millian population did the rioting in these places, which continued long after the Halifax show, and as the Rev. Mr. Quiggin states, the basic cause was "liquor" or to be more correct, the lack of it.

The papers report that the cry was "If we can't buy it, we'll take it". It may not be generally known that the local prohibitionists have the situation so well in hand in Nova Scotia that, from Thursday night to Monday morning, one may not buy liquor legally, hence the flourishing bootleg trade in Water and Hollis streets in Halifax, and all over the province.

To help alleviate the situation, a very generous and broadminded lady financed and organized the "Ajax Club" where a sailor could legally drink his beer and relax in pleasant surroundings when ashore. There were no unpleasant incidents whatever, as the management was very efficient, yet the prohibitionists again had to interfere, and in Fort Massey Church, for one, preached against the club, so Halifax caused the club to be washed out, and the bootleggers resumed selling to the sailors. The papers state that Halifax did nothing to merit these riots.

Does the general public know that single war workers non-resident had to pay a City poll tax of \$10 per annum, other non-residents a similar tax on the value of their apartments or quarters. ("Ottawa take note.") Halifax is a city where 60 percent of the houses are without bathrooms, and the majority of the non-residents are there under orders and not of choice. Also, where eight sailors in one small room and six in another small room in a \$30-a-month house had to pay \$4 per week per man for a single cot only. Why would a cabbage cost 58c and 20 miles away 6c?

There are many more things that could be said but for Heaven's sake don't let anybody give the Navy all the blame.

F. C.


Metcalf street,
Ottawa, May 15, 1945.

M E M O R A N D U M

May 17, 1945.

Brigadier Ferguson

1. As requested herewith clippings re Halifax Riots. Others will be sent to you from time to time as they appear.
2. When these have served your purpose, would you be good enough to have them returned to this office for our Press Index files.


Jean Marchand, Lt.-Col.,
for F.X. Jennings, Colonel,
Director of Public Relations (Army)

/VM
Enc.

MAY 16 1945

Why the Sailors Didn't Like Halifax

Direct
Armed
Press

Direct
Armed
Room

Mr. Leslie Roberts, well known Canadian writer, says in a covering note:—"It seemed to me, after reading your leader in today's Journal, that a civilian who has crisscrossed the Atlantic in our Little Ships, who has visited all our bases overseas and in Newfie, who has lived with our Navy for months on end and written a book about the job we've done, might be permitted to say a good word for the lads in the Service and to point up where some of the blame lies."

To the Editor of The Journal:

SIR:—Noting your allusion in today's leading editorial to the Halifax V-E Day riot and your plea for fair judgment of the Royal Canadian Navy, perhaps you will permit a writer who has travelled extensively with the R.C.N. to add his two cents' worth to this discussion.

While there can be no condoning of looting and the destruction of property (which incidentally was not merely a Navy job, but one "common to all arms" and to a great number of civilians), it is interesting to examine causes. People simply do not go off the deep end, en masse, like this, unless they have something on their minds. What the Navy had on its mind was Halifax. The Navy simply does not like Halifax—and for good reasons.

You have to differentiate between Navy and the other services in this respect. The others, Army and Air Force, come and go. But Halifax is a major naval operational base, and the war, for five years, has been just outside the submarine nets. Consequently a great many naval personnel have tried to establish some sort of homes in the city, where they could be with their wives and children when their ships are in harbor.

The Government established rental ceilings and tried, albeit ineffectually, to keep some kind of housing order in the chaos of a city sheltering double its normal population. But a lot of the renters always had an out for that. They'd rent the sailor and his wife a room at the ceiling level, but before they could take possession, the tenant would discover he had to slip his landlord a "present" of, say, fifty dollars in cash, for which there'd be no receipt given. Some time later he might be asked to make another such gift. And so on, and so on, ad nauseam.

From such items as these and from similar sorts of activity amongst a certain type of shopkeeper, came the Navy's dislike of Halifax.

ON the social side things were never much better, excepting in the homes of what always seemed to the writer to be a minority, a small minority of the population. The townsfolk largely held aloof from the Services. Many of them publicly deplored the upset in their lives caused by overcrowding and the feeling that the people of the city were being elbowed aside in a city which has been at war for five years as no other Canadian city has.

A great deal of civilian grumbling could always be heard. "We are ignored by Canada between wars, left to stew in our own juice. Then when war comes you descend on us in tens of thousands and won't even let us live quietly in our own city." There was much talk of this sort and it could be heard from many of the so-called "best people". In short there was never much welcome, in spirit, for the men in uniform, particularly the Naval uniform, from a large part of the Haligonian population.

Against this the treatment of the Canadian sailor in the distant places where his other main bases have been situated always struck this observer as being tops. That goes for Newfoundland, for Northern Ireland, for Scotland and the main base on the Channel whence the R.C.N. put to sea to stalk the Hun in Biscay. In all these places you could sense the warm relationships between the Canadian Navy and the townsfolk. In Newfie the civvies could never do enough for the boy in the bell-bottomed trousers. In Ireland and Scotland nobody was ever at a loss for places to go,

things to do, people to talk to. The same feeling was in the air down on the Channel coast, too. The Canada flash on the shoulder was always an open sesame to British hearts and homes.

SOMEWHERE in this, in some way which can't quite be put into words, you have the story of what happened in Halifax. It was an unhappy business which got clean out of hand. It is not my province to distribute blame for that. The point here is that what touched a match to the tinder was what may be termed the Spirit of Halifax. Not every Haligonian had that spirit, but enough of them did to engender the Navy's bitter feeling towards the townsfolk which derived from being made to feel unwelcome.

The Navy didn't loot St. John's. They didn't take apart the British cities where their Old Country basés are. Those people in Halifax (including the ladies who have resigned from canteen work) who are now feeling "shocked" and "stunned" might do well to reflect on these matters. Say what you like, it was the kids in Navy blue, the kids in the frigates and corvettes out of Halifax, and the blokes in the Merchant Navy, who kept the lifeline open, while others ashore were jacking up the rents and complaining about the overcrowding of their city.

All of which is simply for the record. **LESLIE ROBERTS.**
The Chateau Laurier,
Ottawa, May 14, 1945.

PRESS CLIPPING NO.

103
J925

OTTAWA JOURNAL

MAY 16 1945

Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Press Index Section

RETURN TO
Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Room 402, Laurentian Building

THOSE DRUNKEN RIOTS.

Sir:—After reading, in this column, yesterday, the letter from the Rev. R. G. Quiggin, one might wonder if it were not more logical to hold the school of thought which Mr. Quiggin represents responsible for the deplorable happenings in Halifax on V-E Day.

Anyone who has travelled in countries where the use of liquor is considered a personal matter, knows that absence of restrictions against liquor does not produce drunks or anarchy. Conversely, we need not even go abroad to learn what restrictions on the use of liquor may do, for the days or evils of prohibition are not yet so far off that the lesson it taught could have been forgotten.

Surely, if those sailors in Halifax could have obtained their drinks in a normal and legal way, they would not have looted the Government liquor stores, nor would they afterwards have carried on as they did.

As Mr. Churchill has just said: "Holidays and rejoicing is necessary for the human spirit." Sailors on shore leave will drink liquor, on occasion; they always have, and, whether we approve or not, they always will. Rather than condemn them, would it not be better if we should try and understand why chaps want to rejoice and forget, who have spent months, or perhaps years at sea, in submarines, in minesweepers, in merchant vessels harassed by submarines, or in submarine patrols in the Atlantic?

To indict liquor or the liquor trade for the transgressions of individuals under the influence of liquor is as foolish as to forbid the use of fire so that loss of life and property by fires may be avoided, or to hold the automotive industry responsible for the toll of life taken each year in motor accidents.

Lack of vision, and hypocrisy in our social legislation is to blame for what happened in Halifax, not the sailors and not the liquor trade.

A. E. PORSILD,
15 Rosedale Avenue,
Ottawa, May 13, 1945.

102
59.25
PRESS CLIPPING NO.

000188

Directorate of
Armed Forces
Press Index Sec

RETURN
Directorate of
Armed Forces
Room 402, Laure

RIOTS LEAVE HALIFAX

\$1,000,000 HANGOVER

1,500 Plate-Glass Windows Smashed as All Stores
Looted Floor by Floor—Liquor, Beer Stocks
Stolen—Three Men Reported Dead

Ottawa, May 9—(CP)—The military has moved 1,000 troops to a point near Halifax to take care of any further contingencies arising from the "peace" riots.

In addition to the movement of troops near the city, arrangements also have been made to supplement provost forces there temporarily.

LOOKS LIKE LONDON AFTER BLITZ

By ERIC DENNIS

Special to The Star

Halifax, May 8—I have just walked, crawled and climbed through the ruins of Halifax business districts. There is devastation everywhere. The business areas look like London after a blitz. The streets are littered with broken plate glass, with paper, shoes, whiskey and beer bottles. The jails are jammed with civilians and service personnel—men and women alike. The hospitals are overflowing with injured, some of them dying. Three navy men are dead, one killed in the rioting and another, an 18-year-old Vancouver youth, who succumbed to over-intoxication. Today all members of the armed forces in Halifax are confined to barracks until further notice.

A body identified as that of Lieut.-Commandr. John George Smith, R.C.N.V.R., of Halifax and England, was found this morning on the campus of Dalhousie university. An investigation is in progress to determine the cause of death.

Fire was the only thing left for the drinking, reeling, shouting crowds to completely lay the city in ruins. Thousands of panes of plate glass windows have been smashed. Stores have been emptied to the last shoelace. Dozens of merchants have been financially ruined. Few, if any, had carried riot insurance.

STORE AFTER STORE WRECKED

From the ocean terminals in the south-end to the colored settlement of Africville in the extreme north, from the waterfront to northwest Halifax, store after store lies in wreckage. Their stocks which were not carried away to caches by organized looters or "souvenir hunters," have been trampled into the street slimy with rain and debris. This is the final scene in Halifax's VE-Day riots which raged unchecked for hours on end and cost city merchants over \$1,000,000.

Two downtown buildings stand charred in fire ruins. They were touched off by incendiaries early last evening as a last fling before a curfew was clamped on Halifax and all service personnel were ordered back to barracks by Rear Admiral L. W. Murray, C.B.E., commander-in-chief of the Canadian northwest Atlantic.

OTTAWA PROMISES HELP

Donald Gordon, chairman of the wartime prices and trade board, has promised Halifax to "do everything possible" to rush supplies to this city as replacements for those destroyed. Little hope was held out by Mr. Gordon and by W.P.T.B. authorities at Halifax that sufficient plate glass could be secured to replace the thousands of panes broken.

Hon. J. L. Ilsley, acting prime minister, announced in Ottawa that E. L. Cousins, wartime administrator of Canadian Atlantic ports, has been instructed to "investigate all phases of the situation that has arisen in Halifax and to report to the government at the earliest possible moment."

The rioting started when service men defied two policemen at a Sackville St. liquor store around midnight Monday night, smashed through the window and pulled bottle after bottle, case after case of spirits and beer into the street. The store had been closed since Friday night.

Within seconds hundreds had joined them. Police were crushed in the rushes as they tried to stop them. "Come and get it," they

TORPEDOED MAY 5 OFF RHODE ISLAND

Boston, May 9—(AP)—Twelve men are missing and three were injured when a German submarine torpedoed and sank the U.S.S. Black Point, 5,553-ton coal carrier, off Point Judith, R.I., in the closing hours of the European war on Saturday night, May 5.

An official of the firm owning the collier said one submarine was reported destroyed by naval action.

Then everywhere in the business districts further rioting flared.

WORST YET TO COME

But this was only tame to what was coming. During yesterday morning and until about 3 o'clock in the afternoon there was a lull in the uncontrolled rampage as service personnel were called to attend a divine drumhead service on the garrison grounds.

With the ceremonies over, the gangs raced down over the hill streets to the downtown area like a division of infantry in a bayonet attack, yelling and screaming. Their main target was Oland's brewery shouted as they hurled the liquor out on to the street.

(Continued on Page 2, Col 1)

90

NO.

OTTAWA JOURNAL
MAY 12 1945

Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Press Index Section

RETURN TO
Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Room 402, Laurentian Building

INDICTMENT.

Sir:—Who are to blame for the disgraceful riots in Halifax?

Mayor Butler blames the Royal Canadian Navy. There must have been resentments and suppressed feelings among the sailors to have caused such an emotional explosion. But that explosion was vastly increased in devastating power by beverage alcohol, which has the deadly effect of unleashing unrestrained human passions.

The sailors are the victims of a trade carried on by polished, cultured, members of society, who are yet so dead to a sense of responsibility for the welfare of their fellow-men, and women, that they are ready to make huge profits out of the degradation and moral destruction of their fellow-citizens. I indict the liquor trade as one of the greatest saboteurs of civilization.

But not the liquor trade alone. Any government that seeks large revenues from this trade is guilty of complicity with the trade in the deaths, wounds, and disorders that occurred in Halifax, and everywhere else where liquor flows freely.

R. G. QUIGGIN.

First Baptist Church,
Ottawa, May 10, 1945.

PRESS CLIPPING NO.

1000
000190

ARMY MESSAGE

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

CLEAR

(OUTGOING)

FILE

Adm 1(a)3.

PLACE

DATE

Ottawa, Ont., 16 May 45.

Commander,
Camp Borden Military Camp,
Camp Borden, Ont.

District Officer Commanding,
Military District No 6,
Halifax, N.S.

RANKS 8568

RETEL CMDG SIX A9618 MAY FIFTEENTH WHICH WAS ADDED
COMDR BORDEN REFERS PROVOST DETACHMENT BEING
DESPATCHED TO 37 PROVOST COY stop AUTHORITY GRANTED
FOR DESPATCH OF FOUR OFFICERS AND FIFTYSIX OTHER
RANKS PROVOST PERSONNEL ON ATTACHMENT TO 37 PROVOST
COY FAP EXCEPT PAY stop COMDR BORDEN TO NOTIFY DEFENSOR
NAMES OF FOUR OFFICERS stop UPON COMPLETION OF PRESENT
DUTY TO CEASE ATTACHMENT AND BE RETURNED FORTHWITH TO
CAMP BORDEN stop ADDED COMDR BORDEN RETEL CBQ 780
MAY FOURTEENTH RPTD CMDG SIX

ADJUTANT-GENERAL

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

TH	MAY BE SENT AS WRITTEN BY ANY MEANS	DEGREE OF PRIORITY	TIME OF ORIGIN
EX	INC		
INC	WIRELESS		
SIG	for Colonel of Admin.	IMPORTANT	94645

COPY 4 FOR ORIGINATOR'S FILE

000191

NOTE TO FILE

HQ54-27-63-7 Vol 2 Adm 1(a)3.

Ottawa, Ont., 16 May 45.

BORDEN PROVOST ATTACHMENT TO
37 COY C PRO C

The matter of attaching this personnel fap except pay to No 37 Coy C Pro C was discussed with Capt Hummel of D Org. He stated that in view of the fact it was an emergency and of the fact that the attachment would probably be of short duration, this arrangement would be satisfactory.

2. The matter of the 4 Officers was discussed with Major Breithaupt of D Pers. He requested that they be attached fap except pay to 37 Coy C Pro C and that the instructions for their despatch be included with those covering the despatch of the 56 Other Ranks. In addition, Major Breithaupt requested that the Commander Borden be directed to notify NDHQ of the names of the 4 Officers involved.

F.D. Holliss
F.D. Holliss, Capt.,
Adm 1(a)3.

FDH/MW

98

M E M O R A N D U M

TO: Adm 3(a)2.

Attention Capt Groom.

Department of National Defence

H.Q. 54-27-63-7 Vol 2 Adm 1(a)3.

OTTAWA, Ontario 16 May 45.

BORDEN PROVOST DETACHMENT
37 Coy C Pro C

The matter of the attachment of the Other Rank Personnel to 37 Coy C Pro C has been discussed with the appropriate officer in D of Org (Capt Hummel). It was proposed to attach the Other Rank Personnel to 37 Coy C Pro C for all purposes except pay. Capt Hummel stated that in view of the fact that it was an emergency and of the fact that the attachment would probably be of short duration, this arrangement would be satisfactory.

2. It is therefore recommended that the following wire be despatched to the Commander Camp Borden and DOC MD 6:

"RETEL CMDG-SIX A9618 MAY FIFTEENTH WHICH WAS

ADDSD COMDR-BORDEN REFERS PROVOST DETACHMENT

DESPATCH^{ED} TO 37 PROVOST COY Stop RECOMMEND

ATTACHMENT TO 37 PROVOST COY FAP EXCEPT PAY

Stop UPON COMPLETION OF PRESENT DUTY TO CEASE

ATTACHMENT AND BE RETURNED FORTHWITH TO CAMP

BORDEN Stop ADDSD CMDR BORDEN RETEL CBQ 780

MAY FOURTEENTH RPTD CMDG SIX"

F.D. Holliss, Capt,

Adm 1(a)3.

FDH/MW

000193



THIS IS A ARMY SIGNAL OFFICE DEFENSE OFFICE		
IF INCORRECTLY DELETED REMOVED COMPLETE BELOW AND RETURN TO A.S.O. 615 WOODS		
BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE

adm

VER V AC NR 163 & 164

FROM COMMANDING SIX HALIFAX NS 151717P

TO COMMANDER CAMP BORDEN

TO DEFENSOR

QSH GR 60 BT

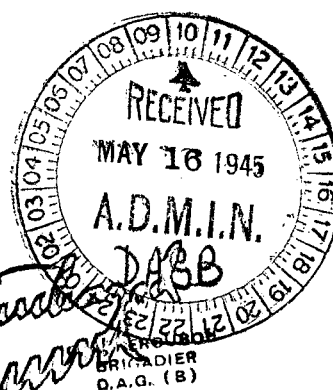
A 9618 RETEL CBQ 780 DATED 14 MAY 45 ADDRESSED DEFENSOR STOP
 COMMANDER CAMP BORDEN RECOMMENDS CAMP BORDEN DETACHMENT PROVOST
 REMAIN ATTACHED THIRTY SEVEN PROVOST COY DUTY RATIONS AND QUARTERS
 FOR INDEFINITE PERIOD STOP ADVICE WILL BE GIVEN AT EARLIEST WHEN
 RELEASE CAN BE MADE IN MEANTIME INTERIM PAY ARRANGEMENTS HAVE
 BEEN MADE

BT 15 2155P MH

Adm (adm 3)

Consult with Adm 1 and have this regularly checked

La B...



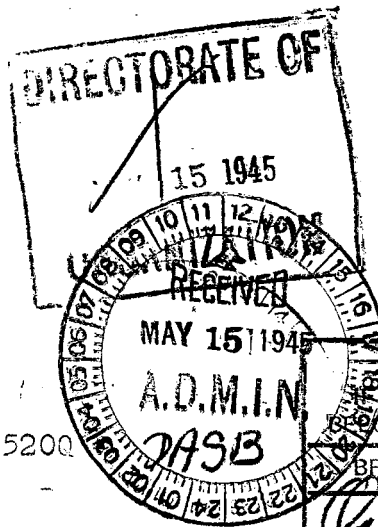
60016

96

MAY 16 1945

D. AG (B)
202 Aglmer.

①



VER V CIB NR 43
FROM CMDR BORDEN 141520Q
TO SECTY OTTAWA
GR 38 BT

THIS IS AN ACTION COPY		
INCORRECTLY DELIVERED, COMPLETE NOW AND RETURN TO A.S.O. 615 WOODS		
BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE
<i>Cygn.</i>	<i>0915</i>	<i>R. F. Macdonald</i>

CBQ 780 REFERENCE TELEPHONE CONVERSATION BRIGADIER FERGUSON MAJOR
GENERAL SPENCER AUTHORIZATION REQUESTED FOR DESPATCH OF FOUR OFFICERS
AND FIFTY-SIX OTHER RANKS CANADIAN PROVOST CORPS AND ADVISE AS TO
ATTACHMENT FOR PURPOSES OF PART II ORDERS

14183 ② *Adm. Col. Dunneason*
I spoke to Col. Dunneason
He Adm. in mDB who will find
out what they want to do with these
provost. He will phone me. Reason no orders
were issued was that it was not known
how long they would be at Malabar
They have been compensated at full
expenses except pay to 37 day e per

BT 141824Q LK B

A. FERGUSON
BRIGADIER
DATE
1225000195
MAY 15 1945

M E M O R A N D U M

May 15, 1945.

Brigadier Ferguson

1. As requested through Major Beamish, you will find enclosed clippings and newspaper pictures of the Halifax Riots.
2. We have asked P.R.O. M.D. 6 by teletype to collect all available prints which will be forwarded to us in the very near future.



Jean Marchand, Lt.-Col.,
for / F.X. Jennings, Colonel,
Director of Public Relations (Army)

/VM
Enc.

94

Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Press Index Section

RETURN TO

Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Press Index Section



L'ORGIE DE HALIFAX : Au cours d'une tumultueuse célébration de la victoire dans la nuit de lundi à mardi, tous les magasins de Halifax, surtout les magasins de liqueurs, furent pillés et 1,500 vitrines furent enfoncées. Les dégâts sont évalués entre \$1 et \$5 millions. Deux matelots ont perdu la vie et les hôpitaux sont encombrés de blessés. On voit ici des matelots célébrant la victoire dans un parc avec leurs amis.

(Photo Central Press)

PRESS CLIPPING NO.

93

000197

Bijouterie saccagée à Halifax



Cette vignette montre l'état d'une grande bijouterie d'Halifax à la suite des désordres qui ont marqué la célébration de la victoire. Pendant ces manifestations, deux édifices furent incendiés et le quartier des affaires fut saccagé et pillé.

L'hon. M. Ilsley examine les dommages à Halifax

Des désordres ont éclaté la nuit dernière à New-Waterford. — Policiers blessés; actes de saccage et de pillage. — Réparation des dégâts réclamée.

Halifax, 11. (P.C.) — Le premier ministre intérimaire, l'hon. J.-L. Ilsley a examiné aujourd'hui les dommages causés lors des désordres d'Halifax et le maire de la ville, M. Alan Butler, a demandé aux civils et aux militaires de manifester réciproquement de la tolérance à la suite des désordres qui ont marqué la célébration de la victoire et qui ont causé des dommages s'élevant peut-être à \$5,000,000.

La ville de New-Waterford a été la scène de nouveaux désordres la nuit dernière. Une foule de quelque 300 jeunes gens et jeunes filles ont pris d'assaut et pillé des magasins et ont blessé deux policiers.

Les officiers de police furent blessés par des pierres lancées par les manifestants. Le maire de la ville a demandé des secours au procureur-

général et au commandant des forces militaires dans le district du Cap Breton.

Le magasin de liqueurs de New-Waterford, pillé la nuit précédente, fut pris d'assaut de nouveau la nuit dernière mais il ne restait plus guère de boisson pour les pillleurs. Les manifestants ont brisé les fenêtres du bureau de poste mais ils n'ont pas tenté de pénétrer dans l'édifice.

Couvre-feu à Sydney et à Liverpool

A Sydney et à Liverpool on a appliqué le couvre-feu pour prévenir de nouveaux désordres dans ces villes.

L'hon. M. Ilsley est arrivé à Halifax ce matin puis il s'est rendu à sa demeure à Kentville. Il doit revenir dans la capitale au cours de la journée pour étudier davantage les questions de réparations des dommages et du partage des responsabilités pour les dégâts causés dans les orgies de boissons et dans les pillages au cours des nuits de lundi et de mercredi.

Le premier ministre intérimaire doit conférer avec le maire d'Halifax, M. A. Butler, le président de la Chambre de commerce, M. A.-T. O'Leary, ainsi qu'avec l'administrateur des ports canadiens de l'Atlantique que le gouvernement fédéral a chargé de tenir une enquête spéciale.

A SUIVRE SUR LA PAGE 14

L'hon. M. Ilsley examine ...

SUITE DE LA PAGE 3

La Chambre de commerce a déjà demandé au gouvernement fédéral de nommer un comité judiciaire pour déterminer les responsabilités dans ces désordres.

Présumée menace des marins

Dans son message aux citoyens d'Halifax et aux militaires, le maire Butler dit que "plusieurs coeurs sont endurcis ces jours-ci". Il demanda à tous d'éviter des actes qui pourraient violer les droits de toutes personnes paisibles.

Le maire Butler avait auparavant accusé la marine de ne pas avoir réussi à maîtriser son propre personnel et l'amiral Murray a prétendu que les civils étaient la cause des désordres.

La population d'Halifax se demande ce qui se produira maintenant que 1,000 soldats sont prêts à venir en aide à la police militaire et civile à Halifax. Le bruit court que des milliers de marins actuellement consignés à leurs postes menacent de "brûler le quartier résidentiel" de la ville.

D
Doc

91

SOME SCENES OF VICTORY CELEBRATION LOOTING AT HALIFAX

MONTREAL GAZETTE
MAY 1 1945



While civilian and armed forces authorities have tried to shift the blame from their respective shoulders, the pictures above—reproduced from photographs taken on the spot—are evidence that the blame lies equally with civilians and with the armed forces. On

the right men in naval and army uniforms, as well as civilians, are seen with packages rifled from a brewery, crowding the unloading platform. The spectators appear to be taking the matter coolly. In the middle is a sidewalk scene, in which a navy man is displaying a

beer bottle and another navy man is openly carrying what appears to be a couple of pairs of civilian pants. There is a Union Jack over his shoulder. A C.W.A.C. has a package in her arms, as well as what seems to be the head of a clothing store dummy, also an article of

civilian clothing. On the right is a photo of a beer picnic in one of the city parks. There is a broached case of beer and again a display of bottles in the picnickers' hands. A merry mood seems to prevail.

Wilfred Doucette and Roy Tidman Photos

THESE ARE PICTURES OF MILLION DOLLAR B

Water St., where word had quickly spread, thousands of gallons of beer lay.

At the gates and along the fences surrounding the brewery grounds, the mobs found military police standing guard. They rushed the guards and smashed through into the building. The battle of the brewery was on. Within seconds the interior was a scene of utter destruction. Great vats of beer were overturned and flowed down the roadway into the gutters.

RAID LIQUOR STORES

Almost simultaneously, another gang raced to the concrete warehouse of the Nova Scotia liquor commission, almost 10 blocks farther north. They hacked down the iron bars at the doors, pushed in the windows. Soon the tens of thousands of dollars' worth of spirits were coming out, some carried, thrown, some flowing out in rivulets.

They went into the street, and up on to the slopes of Citadel Hill, passing out liquor to those they found without it. They drank, shouted, swore, kissed and kicked as they went. Everywhere glass came tumbling through the streets and looting was on in full force. People everywhere—service men and women for the most part—collapsed every few feet from drunkenness. Many citizens were stopped by the mobsters and ordered to drink with them.

A sailor with two cases of liquor set up a "barroom" on the flat top of a tombstone in St. Paul cemetery on Barrington St. and sold his product at \$5 a bottle. He was sold out within 10 minutes.

Police courts were jammed today with looters, drunks, men and women and one city policeman, who was charged with drunkenness.

Provost guards were ahead of the mob at Keith's brewery and beat back the crowd from the yard. Eventually the guards were overcome by sheer weight of numbers as 5,000 persons stormed the place and the beer was passed out by the hundreds of cases. As the crowd milled about, in a wild melee of drunken disorder, it became more and more belligerent and damage-hungry. Some swarmed away from the immediate scene and packed themselves into the Nova Scotia Light and Power Co. spare trams.

HOSPITALS ARE FILLED

Halifax, May 9—A whole ward at the Royal Canadian Naval hospital was filled by last night, with V-E day casualties. At least 70 stretcher cases were taken from police headquarters to hospitals.

The rioters smashed and burned a city police wagon, leaving only its chassis against a capstan on the waterfront wharf which stopped it from being pushed into the water.

They burned one street car almost to its wheels, wrecked another and broke 800 windows in 20 more.

They cut power lines and uncoupled hoses as firemen tried to quell the flames.

"Parts of Halifax are more seriously damaged than they were by the 1917 explosion," said Chief Constable Judson Conrod. "We were powerless. The mob would have murdered anyone who got in their way." Guns were taken from police to prevent an incident that might touch off pitched battles.

GIFTS FOR WOMEN

They drank and tossed bottles through the windows. Others with their women, lurched to Cornwallis Square.

Men went into women's wear establishments and carted out "gifts" for their drunken companions. A few minutes later the drunken companions themselves were inside, stripping the counters, racks and shelves of all they had. Men with patches denoting overseas service, pleaded with or cursed fellow service men at the wreckage.

Three men stepped through a smashed furniture store window and slipped into a bed, went to sleep and stayed there until they were dragged out by other rioters. In another window, several sat on a chesterfield until their friends overturned it and tore away the legs.

On the curb sat two airmen, with a bottle of rum, while civilians stood by passing a bottle from hand to hand until it was empty and then producing another and then another. They drank steadily, like hundreds of others. As they moved away, one man collapsed completely, eyes rolled back, as if dead. No one paid the slightest attention. Two did not bother to step over him. They stepped on him.

HAD NOTHING TO DO

The celebrations began like those in other Canadian cities, lots of noise, parades and clean fun. When a three-hour display of fireworks staged from ships in Halifax harbor ended Monday night, thousands of sailors and other servicemen were left with nothing to do.

While a group of British and Canadian sailors walked gleefully and "be-damned-to-it-all" down one

described the scene as he looked out of a window into Barrington St., the main business thoroughfare.

"A sailor is staggering up the street with a woman's seal fur coat over one arm and a half-empty bottle of beer in the other. He is shouting, 'They're all just a bunch of thieves,' at nobody in particular. A woman is behind him, both arms piled high with dresses, and behind her are her children, carrying everything from pots and pans to men's shoes. The kids can hardly walk, they're loaded down with so much stuff."

"A petty officer is dancing in the middle of the road with a mannequin from a store window. Crash! There goes another window. He is banging the head of the mannequin into each window he passes. The glass is showering about him."

"Men and women are coming up the street, carrying everything under the sun—cigarettes, canes, hats, shirts, ties, socks, perfume. Not all of them look drunk. Nobody is trying to stop them."

The grassy slopes of Citadel Hill late in the afternoon, presented a fantastic sight. Men and women were sprawled about with a case or a whole year's ration of liquor beside them. Little boys were hawking cases of beer at \$2 a throw.

A mother with a young child on her arm, rushed for a store to get "her share" when the looting was at its peak. Others who started with the same intention fell over jagged glass into the gutter. They were too drunk to move.

WHO WANTS NEW SHOES

Emerging from a store, sailors tossed shoes into the air and shouted, "Who wants a new pair?"

An elderly woman, with a lad in uniform beside her, exclaimed, "I never had so much fun in my life."

In front of one fur store a mink coat valued at \$1,000 lay ripped and soiled in the gutter, along with other valuable furs.

Fire was set to a gasoline station at Blowers and Granville Sts. Then a larger blaze, evidently of incendiary origin, broke out at the People's Credit Jewellers on Barrington St. It spread to a neighboring women's wear store.

Also, of incendiary origin was a blaze on Hollis St. that gutted Fader's drug store. Here a Halifax soldier, just back from overseas, scaled a ladder to rescue a man trapped inside.

At the jewelry store, Sergt. Peter Ryan of the city police caught a man as he emerged with \$1,000 worth of "trinkets." Henry Birks and Sons store also was pillaged, though no fire was reported there. "There isn't a cuff link left," an official said.

AGGRAVATED BY NAVY LEAVES

One of the factors which aggravated the situation, civic officials claim, is that 4,000 navy personnel were given leave when the German surrender became known. Many of the 4,000 were on land for the first time in months.

Air raid wardens did their best to prevent property damage but they were powerless, and merchants could do nothing but stand by while the looters did their work.

The solitary store front that remained unbroken in the downtown area was that of Jack Sutherland's barber shop. Mrs. Emma Mackay, owner of the store, was responsible for the comparative miracle. She stood in front of the store for 15 long and tiresome hours, diplomatically talking at least a dozen people out of breaking her window.

"This store has been here for 56 years," she said, "and it wasn't even broken in the Halifax explosion in 1917."

Two bricks were thrown through the front window of the Halifax Herald. A merchant seaman smashed the windows of the Nova Scotia Light and Power Co. with the brass hand grips from one of the tram seats.

GANGS ROAM STREETS

A shoe store was the first place looted as bands roamed up and down Barrington and Hollis Sts., the city's main thoroughfares, kicking in windows or smashing them with clubs or boards they tore off buildings.

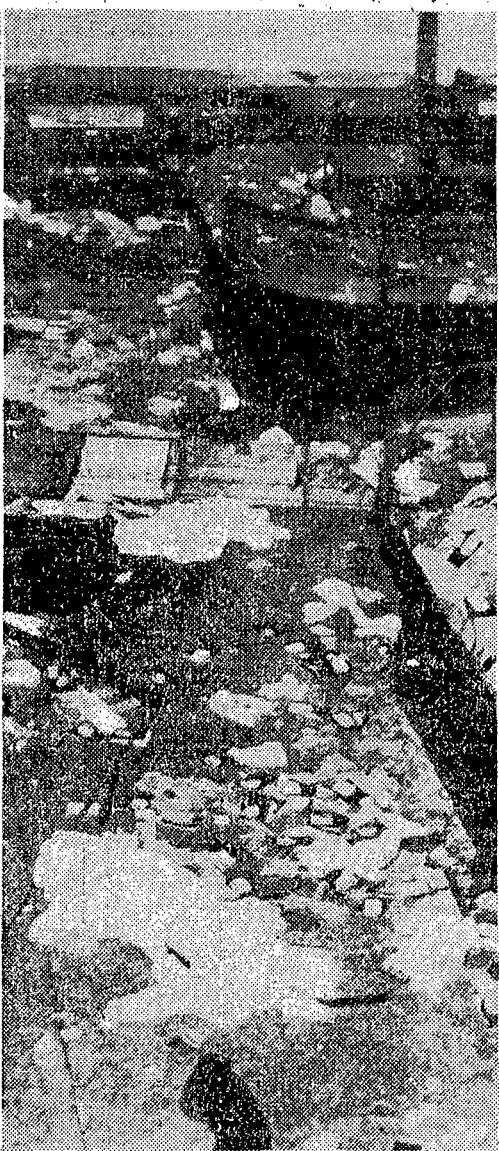
After this wave subsided, a mob of about 500, mostly sailors, marched on Granville St., breaking every window as they caroused along on the west side. In the space of two blocks they smashed 25 windows. They were led by two sailors wielding pieces of wood about six feet long.

A body of naval shore patrol men finally arrived and some rioters took to their heels. The crowd had broken up by the time nine truckloads of military provosts, accompanied by members of the city police, drove up to the scene.

Before the situation reached its crisis, Mayor Butler called a conference with Rear-Admiral Murray, Attorney-General J. H. MacQuarrie, Brig. D. A. White, officer commanding military district No. 6 and Air Vice-Marshal A. L. Morfee, air



TARS HAVE FUN WITH A SHOP DUMMY



LITTERED INSIDE OF JEWEL



EMPTY BEER CARTONS LITTER THE STR



SAILORS AND FRIEND

stances of Monday night's outbreaks indicated ought to have been taken, and failed utterly to take prompt and adequate measures to curb the rioting which was led mainly by naval personnel.

"In righteous indignation at what has been done to their city, the people of Halifax demand: (1) A full court of inquiry; (2) severe punishment for the responsible and the guilty; (3) restitution by the federal government for all those who suffered loss or damage as a result of yesterday's rioting," it added.

A newspaper editorial in the Halifax Mail today stated: "What police were in evidence appeared utterly helpless to cope with any part of the violence . . . and at no time during the height of the wholesale violence was one senior service officer in sight. The streets were jammed with two classes—the looters and wreckers, and the spectators."

HAMILTON MAN STABBED

Hamilton, May 9—James Sellyech, 46, suffered two stab wounds, just as VE-Day celebrations got under

KING OPENS CAMPAIGN MAY 16 IN VANCOUVER

Ottawa, May 9—Prime Minister Mackenzie King will open a general election campaign broadcast over the national Canadian Broadcasting Corporation from Vancouver; it was announced here today that the broadcast will go on the 8:30 p.m. to 9 p.m., E.D.T., be carried under the C.B.C. political time schedule.

Mr. King will arrive in the night of May 15. The coast city the following day will visit Edmonton for and then go to his own Ibert, Sask., constituency, lasting "several days."

It is possible he may stop in Winnipeg on his way to but this part of his itinerary is not certain.

orderly until late Tuesday, the chief continued. "The

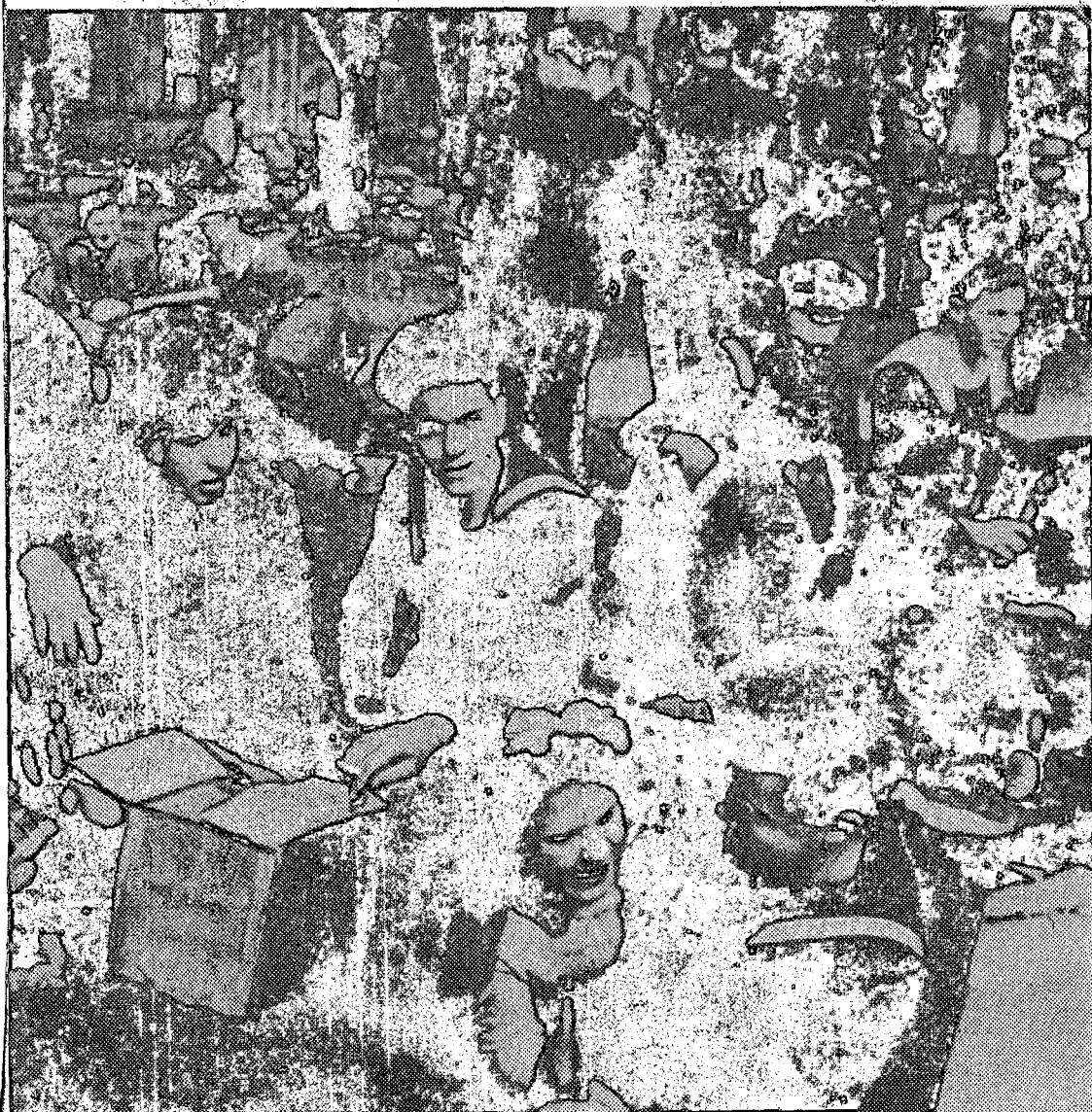
OF MILLION DOLLAR BRAWL AT HALIFAX



LITTERED INSIDE OF JEWELRY SHOP



FUR COAT WAS A "PRIZE"



SAILORS AND FRIENDS HOLD THEIR PARTY IN A PARK

within 10 minutes. Police courts were jammed today with looters, drunks, men and women and one city policeman, who was charged with drunkenness. Provost guards were ahead of the mob at Keith's brewery and beat back the crowd from the yard. Eventually, the guards were overcome by sheer weight of numbers as 5,000 persons stormed the place and the beer was passed out by the hundreds of cases. As the crowd milled about, in a wild melee of drunken disorder, it became more and more belligerent and damage-hungry. Some swarmed away from the immediate scene and packed themselves into the Nova Scotia Light and Power Co. spare trams.

HOSPITALS ARE FILLED

Halifax, May 9—A whole ward at the Royal Canadian Naval hospital was filled by last night with V-E day casualties. At least 70 stretcher cases were taken from police headquarters to hospitals.

The rioters smashed and burned a city police wagon, leaving only its chassis against a capstan on the waterfront wharf which stopped it from being pushed into the water.

They burned one street car almost to its wheels, wrecked another, and broke 800 windows in 20 more. They cut power lines and uncoupled hoses as firemen tried to quell the flames.

Parts of Halifax are more seriously damaged than they were by the 1917 explosion, said Chief Constable Judson Conrod. "We were powerless. The mob would have murdered anyone who got in their way." Guns were taken from police to prevent an incident that might touch off pitched battles.

GIFTS FOR WOMEN

They drank and tossed bottles through the windows. Others with their women, lurched to Cornwallis Square.

Men went into women's wear establishments and carted out "gifts" for their drunken companions. A few minutes later the drunken companions themselves were inside, stripping the counters, racks and shelves of all they had. Men with patches denoting overseas service, pleaded with or cursed fellow service men at the wreckage.

Three men stepped through a smashed furniture store window and slipped into a bed, went to sleep and stayed there until they were dragged out by other rioters. In another window, several sat on a Chesterfield until their friends overturned it and tore away the legs. On the curb sat two airmen, with a bottle of rum, while civilians stood by passing a bottle from hand to hand until it was empty and then producing another and then another. They drank steadily, like hundreds of others. As they moved away, one man collapsed completely, eyes rolled back, as if dead. No one paid the slightest attention. Two did not bother to step over him. They stepped on him.

HAD NOTHING TO DO

The celebrations began like those in other Canadian cities, lots of noise, parades and clean fun. When a three-hour display of fireworks staged from ships in Halifax harbor ended Monday night, thousands of sailors and other servicemen were left with nothing to do.

While a group of British and Canadian sailors walked gleefully and "be-damned-to-it-all" down one side of the street in their underwear, French seamen cruised happily on the other side, their pants legs rolled to the knee and bellowing French songs.

Then, just before midnight the mad binge started.

The looting of Halifax's three liquor stores followed in quick order. Women and girls joined in. Lifting cases of beer and spirits from the shelves and carrying them out into the street. Policemen and navy shore patrol could do nothing but stand dumbly by.

GAVE LIQUOR AWAY

The rioters wandered into alleyways drinking from one bottle as they held others tight against them. Surfeited, they tried to sell and in a city where bootleggers ask and get \$15 a quart, the liquor was going begging at \$5, \$2 and even \$1. As events moved to a frenzy pitch, it was being given away. "They were drinking whiskey by the case," said one policeman.

Thousands strong, a mob milled in front of the Y.M.C.A. building. There the first tram was halted and set on fire with the passengers still in it. They managed to escape in time. The rioters tore out the seats, broke the windows and kindled the debris. The raid on other street cars followed.

As police pulled up in a paddy wagon, servicemen turned on it with shouts of high glee. They rocked the police car back and forth on its springs like a teeter until it toppled on its side. The driver, Constable Fred Nagle, crawled out from behind the wheel, suffering only slight injuries. Someone touched a match to the gasoline spilling from the tank and in a moment there was a torch.

TASTIC SIGHT ON HILL

As the way an eye-witness

uniform beside her, exclaimed, "never had so much fun in my life." In front of one fur store a mink coat valued at \$1,000 lay ripped and soiled in the gutter, along with other valuable furs.

Fire was set to a gasoline station at Blowers and Granville Sts. Then a larger blaze, evidently of incendiary origin, broke out at the People's Credit Jewellers on Barrington St. It spread to a neighboring women's wear store.

Also of incendiary origin was a blaze on Hollis St. that gutted Fadden's drug store. Here a Halifax soldier, just back from overseas, scaled a ladder to rescue a man trapped inside.

At the jewelry store, Sergt. Peter Ryan of the city police caught a man as he emerged with \$1,000 worth of "trinkets." Henry Birks and Sons store, also, was pillaged, though no fire was reported there. "There isn't a cuff link left," an official said.

AGGRAVATED BY NAVY LEAVES

One of the factors which aggravated the situation, civic officials claim, is that 4,000 navy personnel were given leave when the German surrender became known. Many of the 4,000 were on land for the first time in months.

Air raid wardens did their best to prevent property damage but they were powerless, and merchants could do nothing but stand by while the looters did their work.

The solitary store front that remained unbroken in the downtown area was that of Jack Sutherland's barber shop. Mrs. Emma Mackay, owner of the store, was responsible for the comparative miracle. She stood in front of the store for 15 long and tiresome hours, diplomatically talking at least a dozen people out of breaking her window.

"This store has been here for 56 years," she said, "and it wasn't even broken in the Halifax explosion in 1917."

Two bricks were thrown through the front window of the Halifax Herald. A merchant seaman smashed the windows of the Nova Scotia Light and Power Co. with the brass hand grips from one of the tram seats.

GANGS ROAM STREETS

A shoe store was the first place looted as bands roamed up and down Barrington and Hollis Sts., the city's main thoroughfares, kicking in windows or smashing them with clubs or boards they tore off buildings.

After this wave subsided, a mob of about 500, mostly sailors, marched on Granville St., breaking every window as they caroused along on the west side. In the space of two blocks they smashed 25 windows. They were led by two sailors wielding pieces of wood about six feet long.

A body of naval shore patrol men finally arrived and some rioters took to their heels. The crowd had broken up by the time nine truckloads of military provosts, accompanied by members of the city police, drove up to the scene.

Before the situation reached its crisis, Mayor Butler called a conference with Rear-Admiral Murray, Attorney-General J. H. MacQuarrie, Brig. D. A. White, officer commanding military district No. 6 and Air Vice-Marshal A. L. Morfee, air officer commanding. They considered imposing martial law and equipping police with tear gas bombs. However, the milder measure of a curfew was adopted.

This proclamation was read from the sound truck by Admiral Murray. All persons were ordered to return to their "homes, barracks or billets" or "leave themselves open to the full extent of the law."

At one time about 300 rioters were in custody. Two sailors, believed to be the ringleaders of the jewelry store looting and fire, were arrested but as yet no charges have been laid.

Cause of the rioting still puzzled most people, although some sailors asserted it was a "vengeance" or "protest" demonstration for the way the city had treated them.

They said they and their families had been charged high rents for "equate accommodations" in this crowded city—accommodating 120,000 people with space and facilities sufficient for only 70,000—and had paid high prices for all services.

RAPS MILITARY HEADS

In a newspaper editorial today, the Halifax Star declared that "the rioting, looting and violence which outraged unrestrained, and without obvious effort at restraint by the responsible service authorities whose personnel were the prime instigators of the disorders, will be remembered by the people of this port city as one of the most disgraceful and despicable episodes ever witnessed in this or any other Canadian community."

Noting two factors which "stand out with unmistakable clarity," the editorial stated that "the responsible heads of the armed services and in particular the command-in-chief of the navy (Rear Admiral L. W. Murray), failed utterly to take the steps which the circum-

TARS HAVE FUN WITH A SHOP

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act - Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information



EMPTY BEER CARTONS LITTER THE STR

stances of Monday night's outbreaks indicated ought to have been taken, and failed utterly to take prompt and adequate measures to curb the rioting which was led mainly by naval personnel.

"In righteous indignation at what has been done to their city, the people of Halifax demand: (1) A full court of inquiry; (2) severe punishment for the responsible and the guilty; (3) restitution by the federal government for all those who suffered loss or damage as a result of yesterday's rioting," it added.

A newspaper editorial in the Halifax Mail today stated: "What police were in evidence appeared utterly helpless to cope with any part of the violence... and at no time during the height of the wholesale violence was one senior service officer in sight. The streets were jammed with two classes—the looters and wreckers and the spectators."

HAMILTON MAN STABBED

Hamilton, May 9—James Sellyech, 46, suffered two stab wounds, just as VE-Day celebrations got under way here Monday. He is confined to hospital. Police announced they had arrested a man on a charge of stabbing.

Thousands of persons went hungry here yesterday during the celebrations. Practically every eating house in the city was closed. Police received hundreds of calls asking: "Can't the police ask at least one restaurant to open?"

One restaurant finally did open. It was swamped with customers, and some person stole \$10 from the cash register.

FIGHT POLICE AT SYDNEY

Sydney, May 9—Large plate-glass store windows were smashed by the dozen here early today after a crowd of several thousand V-E Day celebrants broke into a liquor store and looted hundreds of bottles of beer and hard liquor. Until 4 a.m. the large crowd of civilians and sailors roamed up and down the streets, battling police and firemen who tried to disperse them. Deputy Fire Chief Robert McKenzie was badly mauled when he ordered firemen to turn a fire hose on the marchers. He was taken to hospital with several broken ribs. None of the celebrants was injured. Chief of Police R. J. McDonald said eight civilians were arrested during the night and other arrests likely will be made today. An 8 o'clock curfew will be applied to night to all military personnel.

SAYS POLICE HELPLESS

"I have been a policeman for 34 years," Chief McDonald stated, "and I have never seen anything like this before. I have only 28 officers on the force and even with provost officers, the shore patrol and mounted policemen, we couldn't do anything with the crowd. They just went wild."

The celebrations were quite

KING OPENS CAM MAY 16 IN VANC

Ottawa, May 9—Prime Minister Mackenzie King will open a general election campaign broadcast over the national network of the Canadian Broadcasting Corporation from Vancouver. It was announced here today that the broadcast will go on at 8:30 p.m. to 9 p.m. E.D.T. and be carried under the C.B.C. political time schedule. Mr. King will arrive in the night of May 15. The coast city the following day will visit Edmonton for and then go to his own constituency, Sask., constituency lasting several days. It is possible he may stop in Winnipeg on his way but this part of his itinerary is certain.

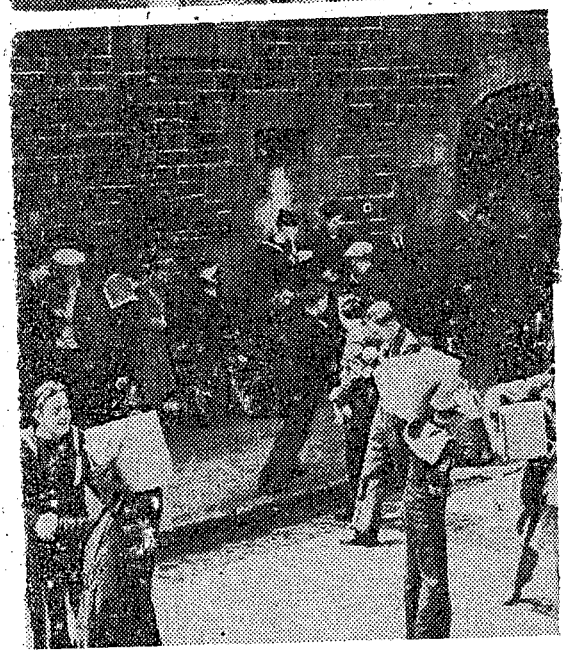
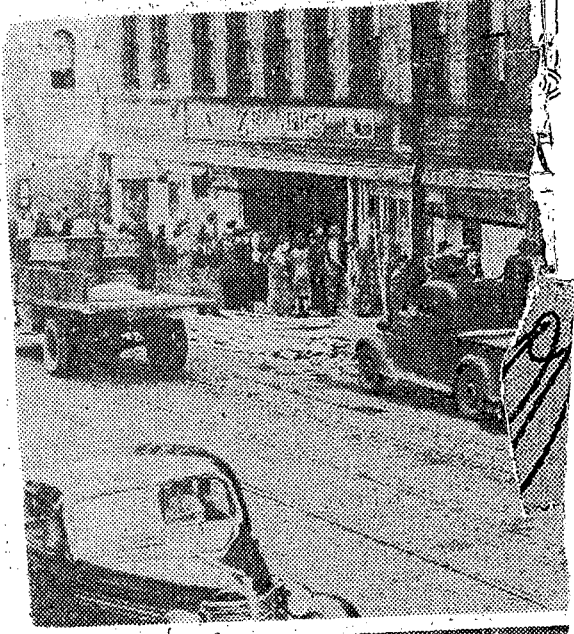
orderly until late Tuesday the chief continued. "The bonfire was started in the town district and several people gathered. 'Someone shouted, 'Let's go to the liquor store, and the next everyone seemed to take. They ran around the corner liquor store, and kicked windows."

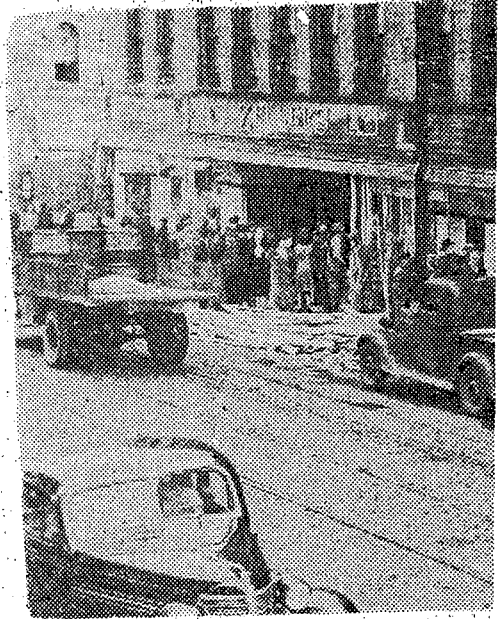
"From then on things got sively worse. With liquor they were like wild men roamed the streets throwing bottles through store windows, looting merchandise from stores," he said.

500 RAID LIQUOR

Kentville, N.S., May 9—of approximately 500, whom were service men day of celebration by a liquor store. J. H. Br of police, today, estimated amount of liquor taken, exceed \$300 in value, smashed, he said. He estimated the cost of the window as \$1

RIOT DAMAGE IS CO

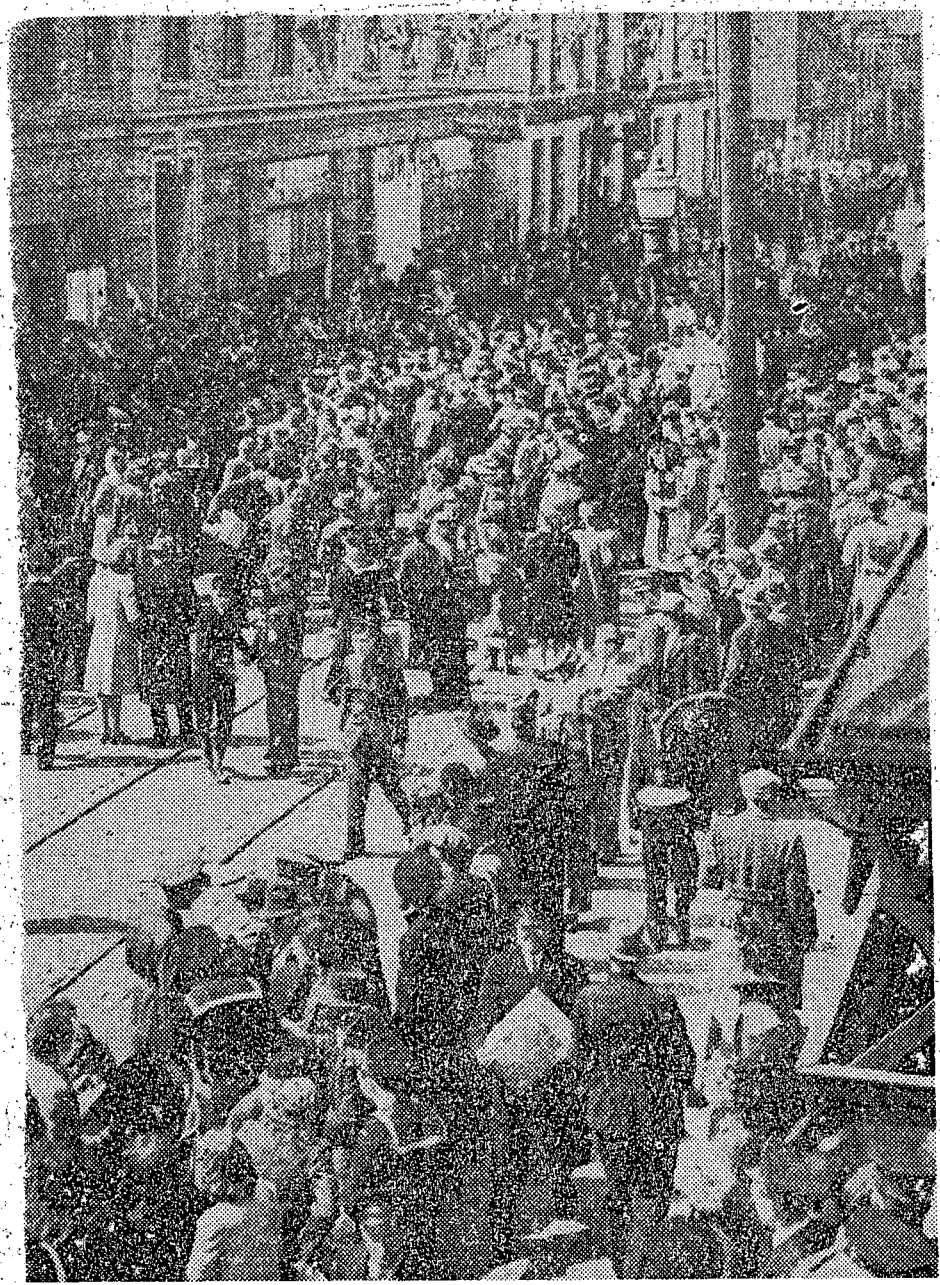
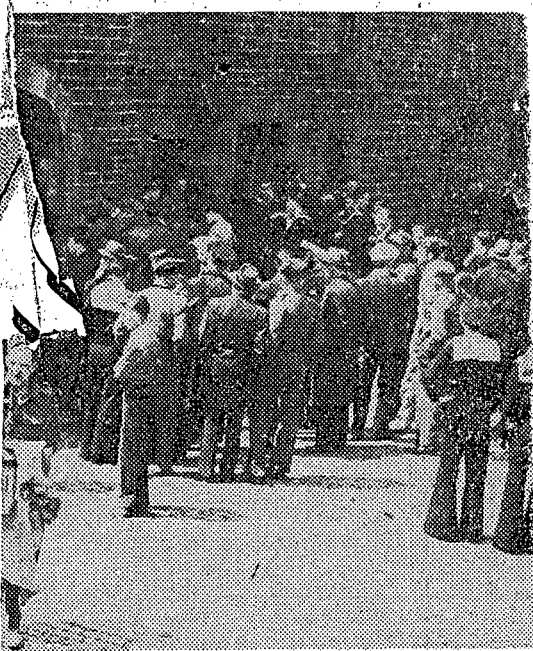
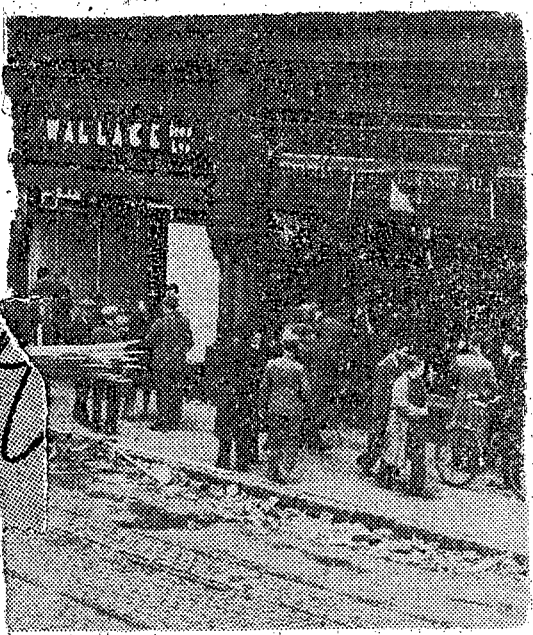


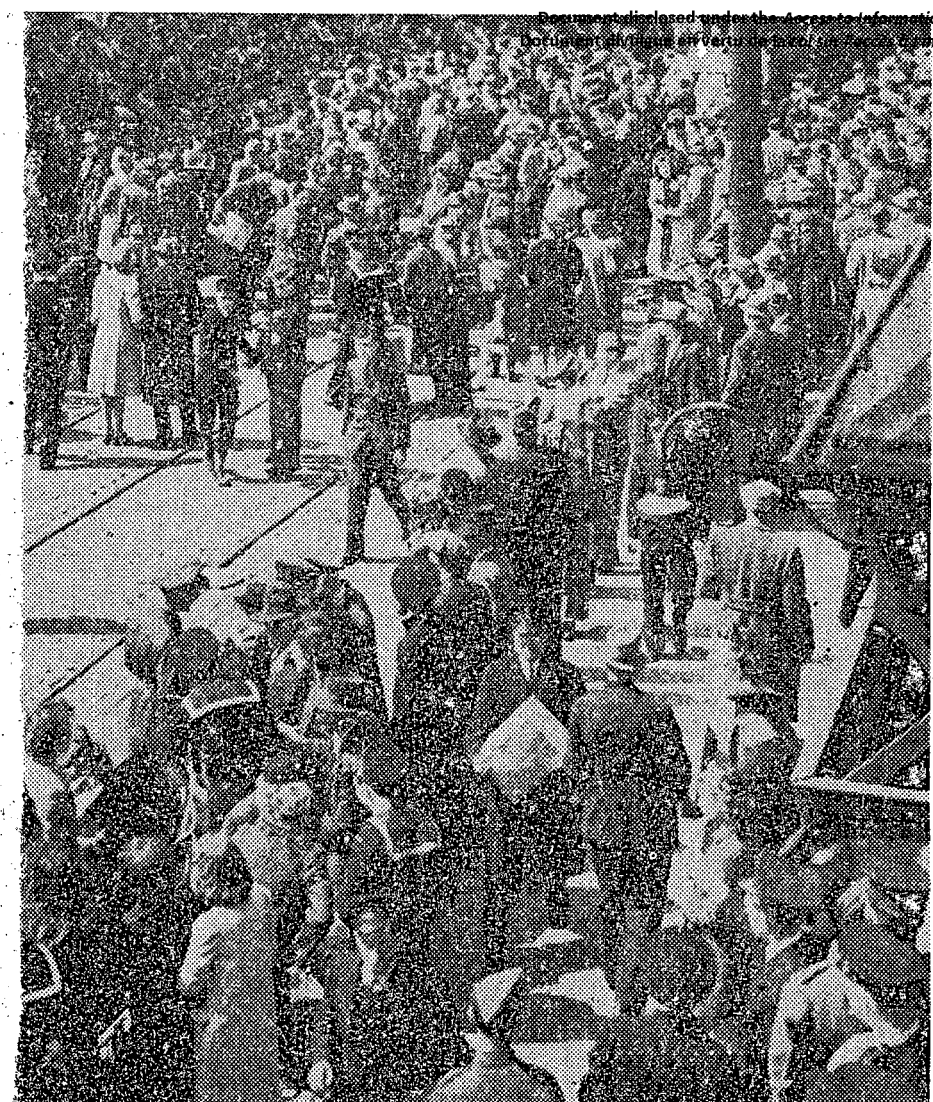
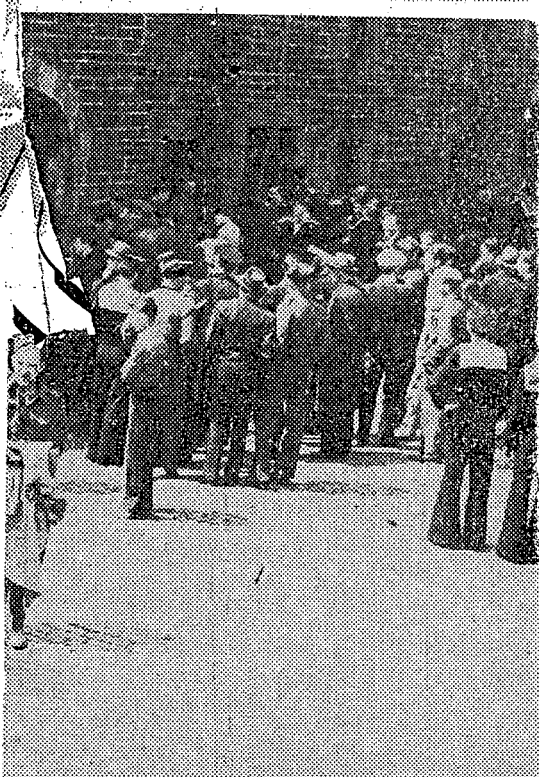


Scenes during Tuesday mobs rampaged through causing damage shown in the accompanying Pharmacy, pillaged and incendiaries, and the sailors carrying carts Commission warehouse RIGHT, a typical mob looted two Liquor Commission in as many days. CEI numerous in many scenes over a looted bottle of scene as boarding (top) and (bottom) Commission warehouse CENTRE RIGHT, a away from the Hollis the battle of the bridge watch the removal of BOTTOM RIGHT, a headquarters by C. Morton and aides.

8 THE HALIFAX J

SENTED IN MILLIONS



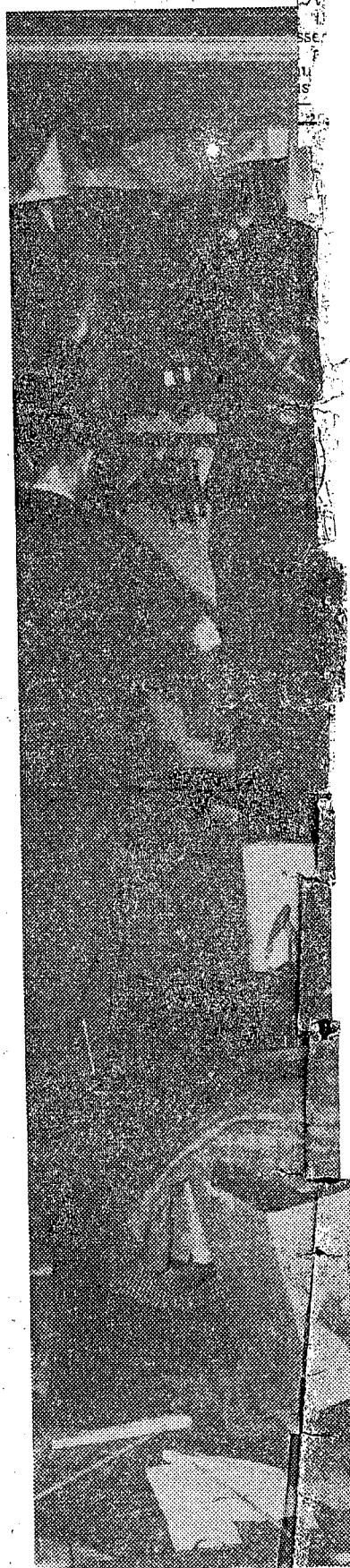
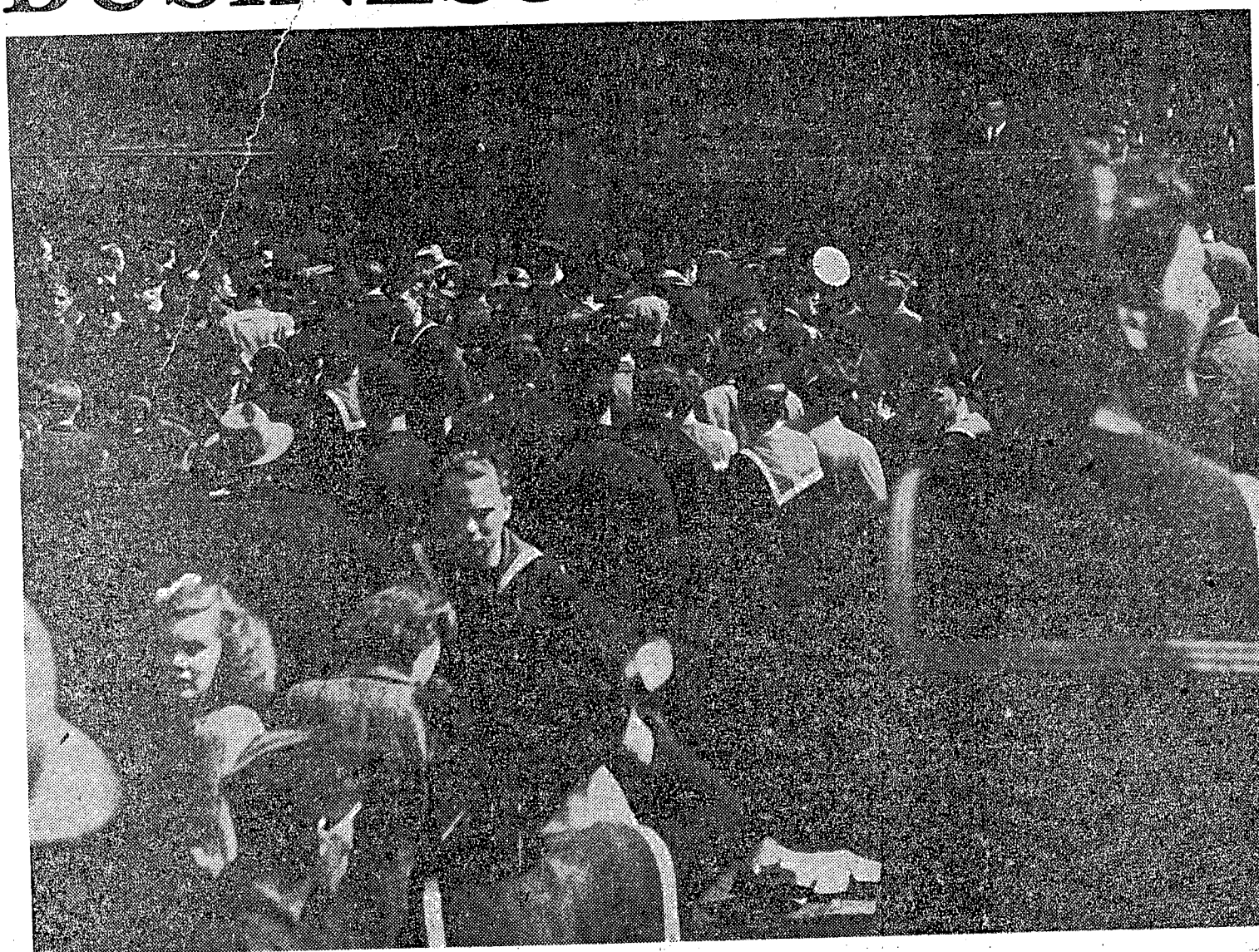


disorders in Halifax, when
business sections of the city
the millions of dollars, are
pictures. TOP LEFT, Fader's
er damaged by fire set by
door store; (underneath it)
beer away from the Liquor
ch was broken into. TOP
on Hollis Street where gangs
n stores for the second time
LEFT, scenes such as this were
the city—two sailors looking
CENTRE, a Barrington Street
amaged store fronts started
in front of the Liquor Com-
attacked and beer removed.
view as stocks were carted
quor store. BOTTOM LEFT,
in full swing as hundreds
rom the downtown brewery.
tim is patched up at police
h Commissioner Dr. A. R.

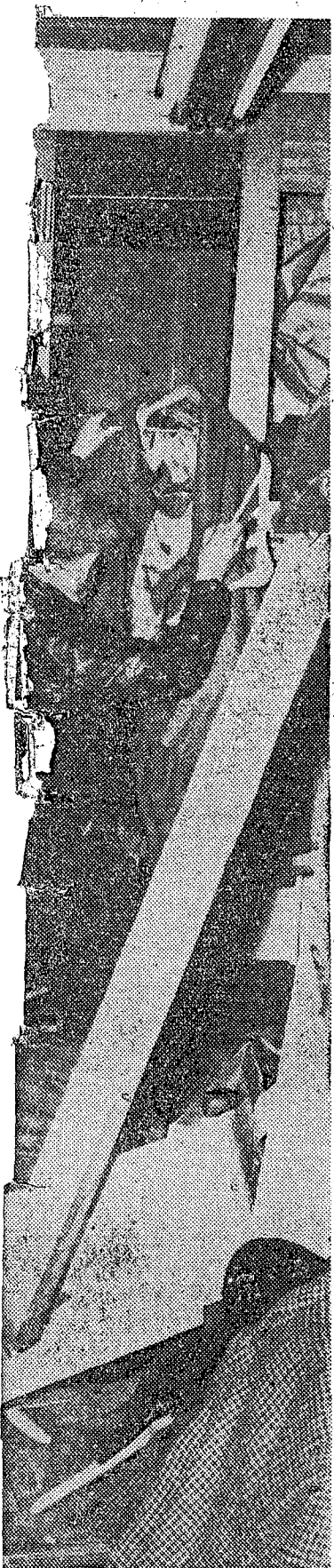
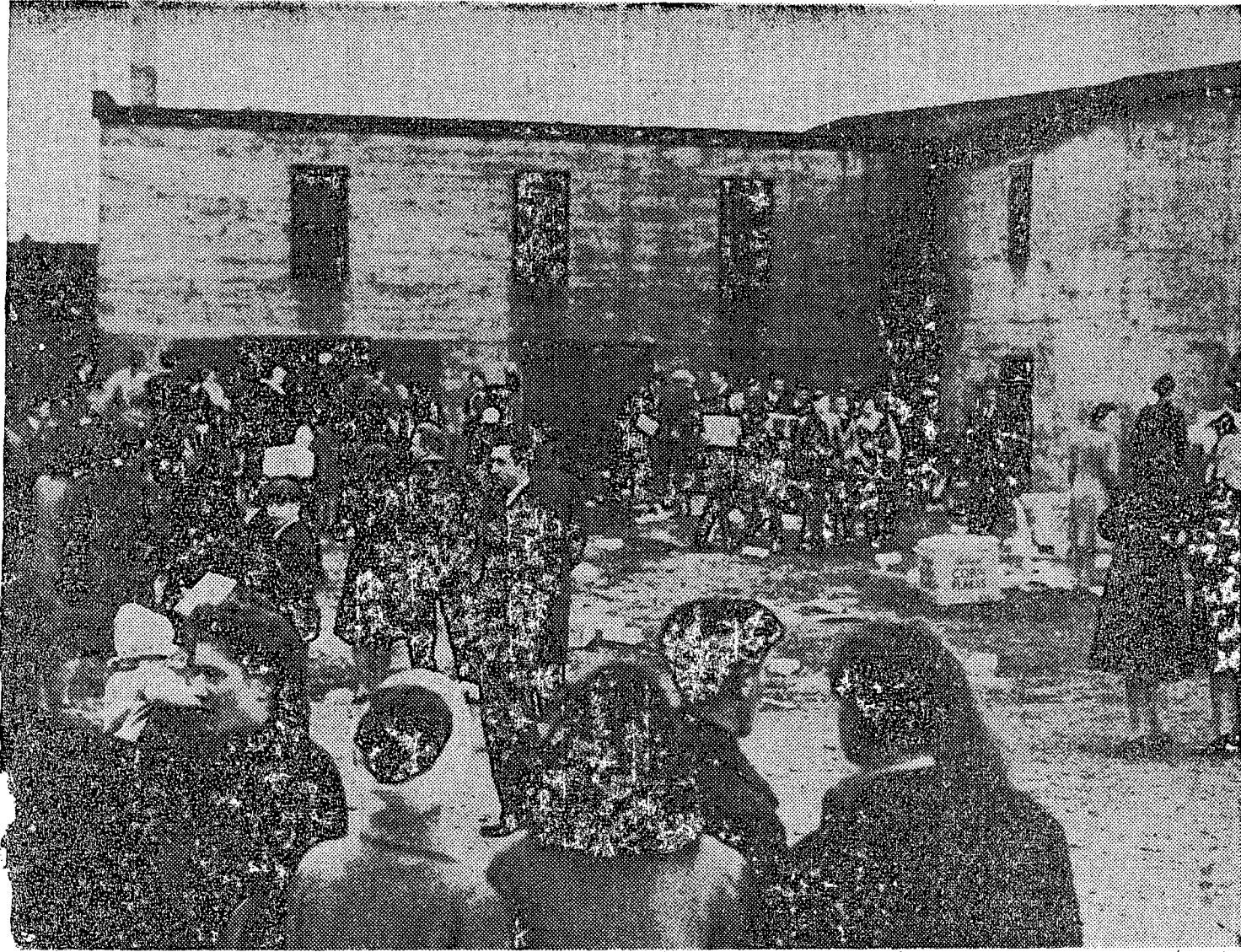


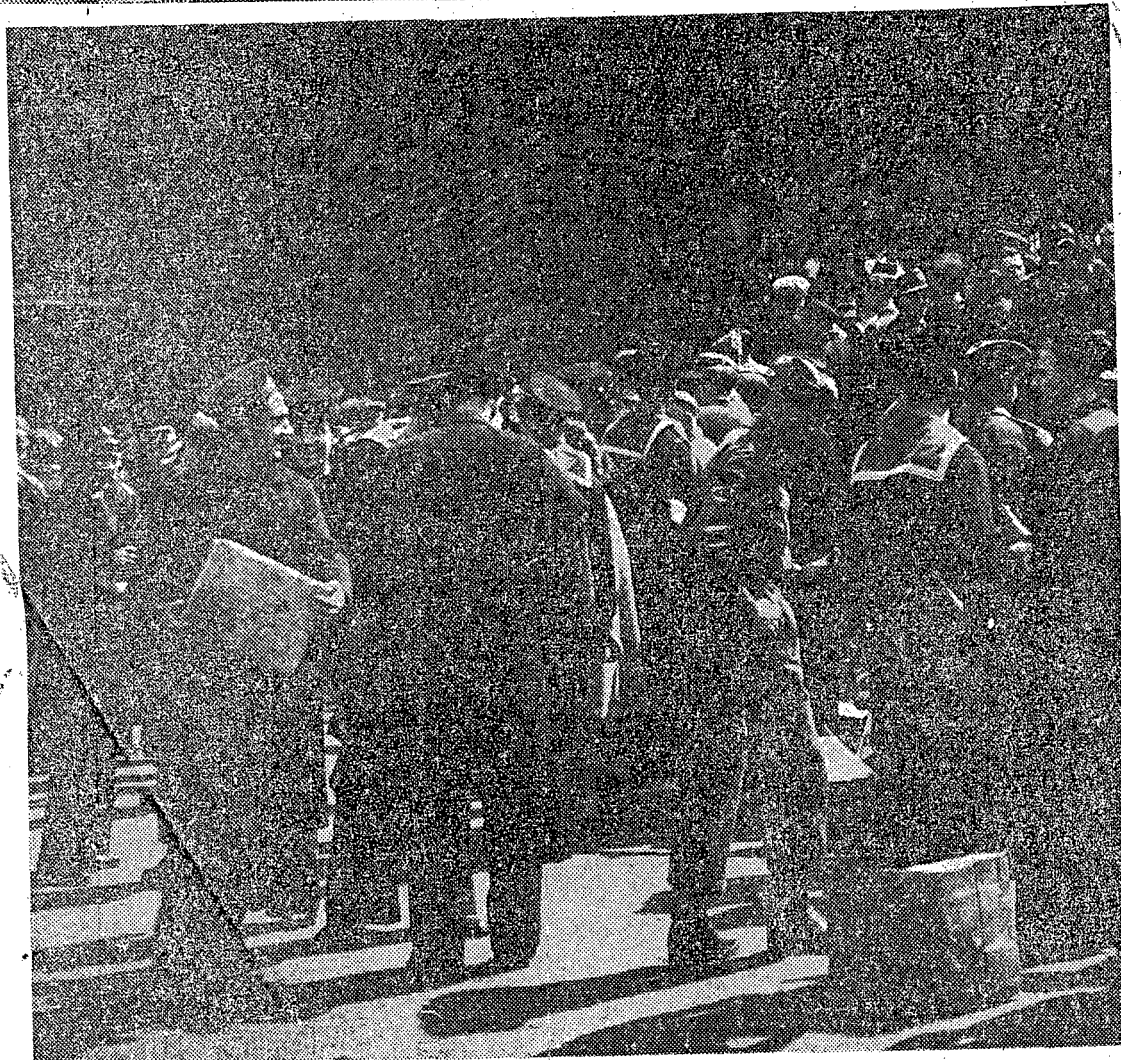
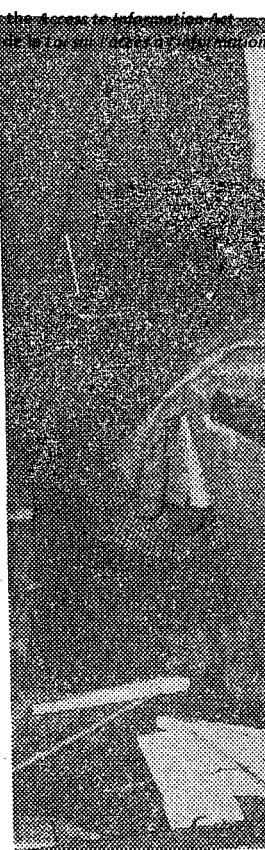
Thursday, May 10, 1945

BUSINESS AREAS WR



HECKED BY RIOTERS





Dartmouth and H
Tuesday's rioting
accompanying pict
TOP LEFT, mi
and watching the
by rioters. TOP
store was stormed
store. CENTRE
fax shoe shine and
continued into the
this picture was
clothing store. Cl
and magazine sto
and civilians tuc
carrying cartons
BOTTOM RIGHT
the corner of Hol
rioters had pass

Thursday, May 10, 1



scenes during and after
looting are shown in the

crowds looting, drinking
at the brewery attacked
by the Dartmouth liquor
crowds are seen leaving the
devastation inside a Hali-
o store. CENTRE, looting
hours of Wednesday and
in a Barrington Street
RIGHT, inside a tobacco
TOM LEFT, servicemen
way bottles of beer and
the downtown brewery.
one that met passersby at
Sackville streets after the



General Crimp In Sales Of 8th Victory Loan

OTTAWA, May 9—(CP)—Canada's two-day celebration of victory in Europe put a general crimp in sales in the Eight Victory Loan campaign, but officials announced tonight that fighting members of Canada's Army who helped beat the Nazis had also won a new record in their victory bond purchases.

Final returns received from the Canadian Army overseas showed that troops in Europe raised \$10,676,100, almost \$500,000 more than they raised in the Seventh Loan drive last fall. In attaining 119 per cent of quota, the Canadian Army overseas reported 116,423 subscriptions, averaging \$91.70 per buyer.

Much of the canvassing was done during actual operations against the Nazis before capitulation and loan officials expected that delayed returns would augment the present figure.

Meanwhile officials were hopeful that the final three days of canvassing in the three-week drive for a minimum of \$1,350,000,000 would see a comeback in returns.

Headquarters reported that on incomplete returns a total of \$63,259,050 was signed up Monday and Tuesday, a figure considerably below the total of \$148,386,650 for the corresponding days of the Seventh Victory Loan last fall.

The total cumulative sales to date reached \$974,276,400 compared with \$1,050,231,650 at the comparable stage of the last loan.

Makes Loan

The slump brought from Finance Minister Ilsley an appeal to every Canadian to make this loan "a mark of your honor for those who paid dearly for victory... a sign of your respect for those who will return victorious."

In a National broadcast over the Canadian Broadcasting Corporation, the Finance Minister urged Canadians to help make this loan "proof of our determination that the peace to come will be worthy of their triumph."

The total overall Canadian Army investment exceeded \$25,000,000 and was more than \$518,000 ahead of the figure at the same stage of the Seventh Loan. The percentage of quota was 122. All but one of the Army commands had passed their objectives.

The No. 1 Command of the R.C.A.F., put on an all-out sales drive on V-E Day which ended with \$565,200 worth of bonds sold, the best day the command has had since they opened. Their contributions helped raise the R.C.A.F. cumulative total to 127.4 per cent of quota with \$15,929,200 now in. Eastern Command has \$2,625,700 for 136 per cent.

The Royal Canadian Navy reported its overall total swelled to \$5,700,000 or 114 per cent of its aim. The increase was provided chiefly by Newfoundland and overseas commands which spurred to 123.5 and 57.2 per cent over V-Day for respective total of \$740,950 and \$257,600. Returns from ships at sea are still slow in coming in. Atlantic Command has \$3,445,700 for 153.1 per cent.

In the "special names" division, subscriptions by life insurance companies and other concerns contributed nearly \$12,000,000 to the National total. Purchases included those of Aetna Life Insurance Co., through its Montreal office, \$1,550,000; Excelsior Life Insurance Co., Toronto, \$1,500,000 and Singer Manufacturing Co., Montreal, \$3,100,000.

Truro, N.S., is poised on the brink of success with \$743,200 for 99 per cent, and is preparing to shoot well over the top with a barrage of applications marked "thanks!"

Rumor Nominee Has Resigned

STELLARTON, May 9—It is rumored here that James W. MacLean, nominee for the C.C.F. party in the Federal election here, who was nominated May 1, has resigned and another convention will likely be held to appoint another candidate. There will be a four-way election for the Pictou representative of the Federal House this election.

**Sunday
May 13**



Say it with
FLOWERS from
The Blossom Shop
LIMITED

OBITUARY

MRS. A. A. MacDONALD
ANTIGONISH, May 9—Mrs. Angus A. MacDonald of Mulgrave died Monday at St. Martha's Hospital at the age of 56, daughter of James MacNeil and Margaret MacKay MacNeil. She is survived by her husband, retired C.N.R. conductor; a son Angus Allan MacDonald; three daughters, Mrs. Geo. Lehman, New Canaan, Conn.; Mrs. Louis Petrie, Long Branch, Ont.; and Mrs. Royal Brews, Englewood, New Jersey.

ARTHUR PERRY
CLYDE RIVER, May 9—After several years of failing health the death of Arthur Perry occurred at his home at Roseway, on May 5th. He was in his late sixties. All his life he had followed the sea. Funeral service, conducted by Rev. Carmen Riggs, was held on Monday. Surviving are a sister, Mrs. Lottie Atwood, who cared for her brother during his long illness, and two brothers, Clarence of Halifax, and Alec of Roseway.

ERVINE BAULD
A former resident of Dartmouth, Ervine Bauld, died Tuesday in Medford, Mass. He had been in failing health for the last two years. Mr. Bauld moved to Boston from Dartmouth some 25 years ago and had since that time. Surviving are his widow, two sons, Harold and Peter in Medford; one sister in Halifax and one brother. Funeral services were held from St. Clement's Church in Somerville, Mass., with burial in Oak Grove Cemetery.

MRS. ANNIE BELL
The death occurred at Tuft's Cove Sunday evening of Mrs. Annie Bell, widow of William Bell. She was well-known in both Tuft's Cove and in Dartmouth, where she lived all her life.

Among surviving relatives are four brothers, Vassie, of Westphal; Joseph and Thomas, both of Tuft's Cove, and Benjamin, of Tatamagouche, Colchester Co.

The funeral was held from her late home yesterday afternoon at 2 p.m. to St. James' Church, Preston. Rev. Canon H. H. Walsh officiated and interment was in Westphal cemetery.

HORTON POWELL
CLYDE RIVER, May 9—Relatives here have received word of the death of Horton Powell at Cupertino, California. He was born at Upper Port La Tour ninety-eight years ago, a son of the late David and Elizabeth Powell, of that place. He moved to the United States many years ago. A service of remembrance, conducted by Rev. Roger Darling, was held at the Roger Darling Garden Chapel.

Surviving are a daughter, Mrs. Geneva Butler of Cupertino, and a son Avery of Boston, Mass. Seaton Powell of Clyde River is a nephew.

MRS. OWEN DAVIDSON
WOLFVILLE, May 9—Mrs. Harriett Davidson, well-known and beloved resident of Black River Lake, passed away Saturday, April 28, at the home of her youngest son, Robie, with whom she had made her home for the past two years. She had been in failing health for some years past. Her husband, Owen Davidson, predeceased her ten years ago.

Mrs. Davidson was a devoted wife and mother, always ready to lend a helping hand to a neighbor, and her death came as a distinct loss to the community in which she had made her home, and to surrounding communities where she claimed a host of friends. Previous to her recent residence she had made her home with an older son and daughter, John and Mabel, at the family homestead.

Mrs. Davidson is survived by three sons and four daughters, John and Robie at home; Lee, in Newtonville;

**A PINCH OF
WINDSOR
TABLE SALT
ON FRUITS
HELPS THE
FLAVOUR**



**GRAPEFRUIT TASTES
EXTRA GOOD WITH A
LITTLE WINDSOR SALT.**



**WINDSOR
SALT**



SAFE IN BRITAIN—F/L Ralph M. Johnson (above), son of Mr. and Mrs. J. D. Johnson, Westmount, P.Q., and nephew of Mr. and Mrs. Roy Johnson, Onslow, is safe in the United Kingdom, according to word to his parents.

Leila (Mrs. Arch Davison), in Melancon; Elsie (Mrs. Frank Cosgrove), in Halifax; Mabel, at home; and Mary (Mrs. Percy Sweet), Bedford. She also had twenty-six grandchildren and seven great-grandchildren. A sister, Mrs. Lila Smiley of Rhode Island, U.S.A., also survives.

Funeral services, held at the Pentecostal Church, were conducted by Paul Barnett, pastor of the church, assisted by Lic. Eric Miner, pastor of Black River and Greenfield churches, and Verge Card, pastor of the Apostolic Church at Davison Street. Rev. Freeman Fenty of the Kentville Baptist church, also attended. Interment was in the Pentecostal cemetery, Newtonville.

MRS. ERNEST SCHULTZ
CLYDE RIVER, May 9—The death of Ida, widow of Ernest Schultz, occurred at her home at Westtown on April 26th. She had been ill for some time and had recently returned from the Dawson Memorial Hospital at Bridgewater. She was born at Sandy Point, Shelburne County, sixty-eight years ago. Surviving are a daughter, Mrs. Brad Perry of Westtown, and three

sons, John, Westtown; Robert, Clyde River, and Wallie, also of Westtown.

Funeral service conducted by Rev. G. F. Seymour was held at Church of England, Shelburne. Burial was at Pine Grove cemetery.

MRS. LEWIS C. PITCHER
HEBRON, May 9—The death occurred suddenly at her home, 13 Acorn Court, Malden, Mass., of Gertrude E. Pitcher, wife of Lewis C. Pitcher, at the age of 47 years. She was the youngest daughter of the late George T. and Julia A. Mullen of Hebron, where she attended school.

Moving to Malden she married and has since resided there. She leaves her husband and one son, George, a brother, Jessie W. Mullen, of Dorchester, Mass.; two sisters, Mrs. Ralph Moses, Hebron, who was with her during the winter, and Mrs. Harold Sweeney, also of Hebron.

MRS. MARTHA L. PLOWMAN
Mrs. Martha L. Plowman, wife of the late Rev. Ernest Plowman, who as a Methodist minister, held charges in many parts of Nova Scotia until his death, died yesterday at the Victoria General Hospital. She had been ill but a short time.

Mrs. Plowman was born in Louisburg, C. B., 62 years ago. She is survived by a son, Raymond, of Halifax, and one sister, Mrs. H. P. Smith of Hampton, New Hampshire.

Funeral services will be held at three o'clock this afternoon at her residence, 137 Edward Street, conducted by Rev. Dr. W. R. Seeley. Later the remains will be forwarded to Louisburg for burial.

MRS. FRANK PEEL
AUBURN, May 9—Following a illness of several months, Mrs. Gladys Binns Peel, wife of Frank Peel, passed away at midnight Sunday, May 5, at Western Memorial Hospital, Berwick, where she had been a patient for the two months, following a brain operation performed at the Royal Victoria Hospital, Montreal.

She was the daughter of H. Binns and the late Mrs. Binns Kieghley, Yorkshire, Eng., where she was born, coming to Canada May, 1832, and was married in Halifax, on arrival. Mr. Peel had preceded her from England, where they came to Auburn where they have since lived. She possessed a rich mezzo-soprano voice and was free for church and community singing.



BROTHERS SERVING—Shown above are two brothers who are serving overseas. At the left is Private Calvin A. MacDonald, whose wife is the former Laura Cameron, Goldenville. At the right is Private Charles H. MacDonald, who has returned to Holland after serving in Germany for a period. They are sons of Mr. and Mrs. F. F. MacDonald, Indian Harbor Lake, Guysboro County.

are two sons, Colin, 7, and Brian, 4. A daughter, Noreen, predeceased her. In England her father, Harry Binns, and four sisters, Mrs. A. Bilby, Mrs. C. Rhodes, Mrs. H. Rushton and Mrs. F. Spencer, also survive.

The funeral service was held at Aylesford United Church, Monday afternoon, conducted by the pastor, Rev. S. G. MacQueen, assisted by Rev. E. L. Tuck, rector of St. Mary's Anglican Church, Auburn. Burial was in St. Mary's cemetery, with committal service conducted by Rev. E. L. Tuck.

GEORGE G. WILLIAMSON
Word has been received by Mrs. Williamson, 70 Pepperell Street, of the sudden death in Montreal of her husband, Sergeant Major George G. Williamson. The news came as a great shock to relatives and friends.

Mr. Williamson, native of Saint John and former resident of Sydney, was the son of Mrs. David Hardgrove of Saint John, and the late William Williamson.

He served for the duration of the First World War and had served in his war since 1939. He had spent some time in Windsor and was stationed in Montreal for the past few months. Prior to his enlistment, he was a well known commercial traveler in the Maritimes.


Surviving besides his widow, the

They go together



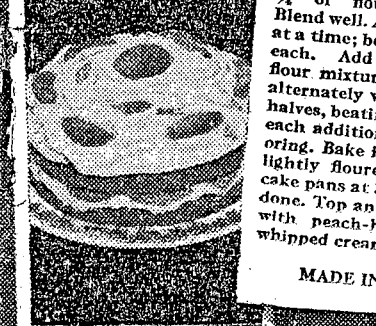
DRINK Coca-Cola ICE COLD

CATELLI EGG NOODLES
*Packaged and Sealed
for your protection*



**Buy it in the package—
always clean—easy to
carry—easy to keep—
quicker to prepare.**

**NO SUGAR
...lots of
lusciousness!**



MAGIC
2 1/2 cups sifted flour
2 1/2 tsp. Magi Baking Powder
1/4 tsp. salt
1/2 cup shortening
Sift dry ingredients together 3 times, shortening. Add gradually, beat after each add 1/4 of flour. Blend well. Add at a time; beat each. Add flour mixture alternately with halves, beating each addition. Bring. Bake in lightly floured cake pans at 375° done. Top and fill with peach-halves whipped cream.

MADE IN C.



000211



BROTHERS SERVING—Shown above are two brothers who are serving overseas. At the left is Private Calvin A. MacDonald, whose wife is the former Laura Cameron, Goldenville. At the right is Private Charles H. MacDonald, who has returned to Holland after serving in Germany for a period. They are sons of Mr. and Mrs. F. F. MacDonald, Indian Harbor Lake, Guysboro County.

He has two sons, Colin, 7, and Brian, 4, and a daughter, Noreen, predeceased. In England her father, Harry, and four sisters, Mrs. A. Milby, Mrs. C. Rhodes, Mrs. H. Houghton and Mrs. F. Spencer, also survive. The funeral service was held at Lylesford United Church, Monday afternoon, conducted by the pastor, Rev. S. G. MacQueen, assisted by Rev. E. L. Tuck, rector of St. Mary's Anglican Church, Auburn. Burial was in St. Mary's cemetery, with committal service conducted by Rev. E. L. Tuck.

GEORGE G. WILLIAMSON
Word has been received by Mrs. Williamson, 70 Pepperell Street, of the sudden death in Montreal of her husband, Sergeant Major George G. Williamson. The news came as a great shock to relatives and friends. Mr. Williamson, native of Saint John and former resident of Sydney, was the son of Mrs. David Hardgrove of Saint John, and the late William Williamson. He served for the duration of the First World War and had served in his war since 1939. He had spent some time in Windsor and was stationed in Montreal for the past few months. Prior to his enlistment, he was a well known commercial traveler in the Maritimes. Surviving besides his widow, the

former Miss Abbie Earle, of Saint John, his mother and his stepfather, are a son and daughter, Ralph and Norma, both of Halifax; two sisters and three brothers, all in Saint John. The remains will arrive in Halifax tonight and the funeral will take place with military honors Friday at 3 p.m. from 70 Pepperell Street to Camp Hill Cemetery.

MRS. ELIZA LANGILLE
MARTIN'S RIVER, May 9—There passed away at her home in Martin's River, Mrs. Eliza Langille, one of the oldest residents of the community after a brief illness. She had reached the grand age of 87, having celebrated that occasion Wednesday, April 25, and today her many friends mourn her loss. The sympathy of the community goes out to her sorrowing family, one son, O. R. Langille, and one daughter, Mrs. William Eisnor (Mildred) Indian Point, and grandchildren. The funeral of Mrs. Langille took place Sunday afternoon from her residence, service being held at St. Martin's Anglican Church conducted by Rev. F. C. Ryott, rector. The remains were laid to rest in the local cemetery.

ARTHUR VICKERY
The death occurred on Tuesday morning, May 8, at his late resi-

dence, 23 Phillips St., of Arthur Vickery. Mr. Vickery, 70 years of age, was born in Crookham, Surrey, England, and was a veteran of the Imperial Army and of the First World War. In 1921 he with his family came to Canada and for the past 24 years was a Department Manager with Robert Simpson (Eastern) Ltd. of this city, where he was held in the highest esteem by his employers and business associates. He leaves his widow, the former Lucy Hardy of Gabarus, Cape Breton, and two daughters, Vera (Mrs. Lawson H. Boutilier) of Halifax, and Alberta (Mrs. Wm. H. Morgan),

of Toronto, as well as several brothers and sisters in England. The funeral will take place from All Saints Cathedral on Friday afternoon, May 11, service commencing at two o'clock, with interment in Camp Hill cemetery.

Check Those Enzymes!



with MERCOLIZED WAX CREAM

Skin robbed of its natural oils looks old, lined, unattractive. Well listen to this. **MERCOLIZED WAX CREAM** checks the action of the oil removing enzymes of your skin. With these enzymes in check, your precious **NATURAL** oils are retained in the epithelium (outer skin). This makes your skin firmer, smoother and brighter! Your skin will look younger, its texture more silky, its color improved. That's why faithful users of **MERCOLIZED WAX CREAM** wouldn't trade their romantic complexions for those many years younger. Start with **MERCOLIZED WAX CREAM** today. At all cosmetic counters.

Give your face a lift with **TARK-ROOT BEAUTY MASQUE**. Wonderful after a long day or before a special date. Try it for movie star brightness.

ICE CREAM

AS LOW AS **12c** A PINT

Sure to be pure—you make it. In 2 minutes, mix **Londonderry**, sugar and cream (even war time cream). Whip, freeze, that's all. No cooking, smooth, no ice crystals. (Use milk or skim milk for delicious frozen desserts). 16c pkg. makes 16 servings. Any flavor. Ask your grocer for **Londonderry**. If he does not carry it send us \$1.00 for 7 packages and 20 famous recipes, postpaid.

Londonderry of Canada.
524 Dominion Square Building,
Montreal, P.Q.

Get rid of CORNS with these 2 drops

Don't limp in agony because of corns! Get cooling, soothing relief from pain—instantly—with **Freezone**! Apply just two drops directly on the corn. Soon the corn is loosened so you can lift it out—easily!

Freezone's simpler, safer treatment eliminates bothersome pads and plasters that make shoes fit tighter. It's antiseptic. Economical.

At your nearest drug or toilet goods counter.

Freezone

NO SUGAR ...lots of lusciousness!

MAGIC Peach Layer Cake

2 1/4 cups sifted cake flour	1 cup white corn syrup
2 1/2 tsp. Magic Baking Powder	2 eggs, unbeaten
1/4 tsp. salt	1/2 cup milk
1/2 cup shortening	1 tsp. vanilla
	1/2 tsp. almond extract

Sift dry ingredients together 3 times. Cream shortening. Add syrup gradually, beating well after each addition. Add 1/4 of flour mixture. Blend well. Add eggs, one at a time; beat well after each. Add remaining flour mixture in thirds, alternately with milk in halves, beating well after each addition. Add flavoring. Bake in 2 greased lightly floured 8" layer cake pans at 375°F. until done. Top and fill layers with peach halves and whipped cream.

MADE IN CANADA

Give your family the "Whole-Grain" They Need

Mrs. Quality-wise says:-

Here are two old favourites I would not be without. Used together or separately they are a delight in the kitchen and on the table.

CROWN BRAND SYRUP

CANADA CORN STARCH

The CANADA STARCH COMPANY LIMITED • Montreal • Toronto



Mr. Williamson, native of John and former resident of Sydney, was the son of Mrs. David Wardgrove of Saint John, and the late William Williamson. He served for the duration of the First World War and had served in his war since 1939. He had spent some time in Windsor and was stationed in Montreal for the past few months. Prior to his enlistment, he was a well known commercial traveller in the Maritimes. Surviving besides his widow, the

and cream (even war time cream). Whip, freeze, that's all. No cooking, smooth, no ice crystals. (Use milk or skim milk for delicious frozen desserts). 15¢ pkg. makes 16 servings. Any flavour. Ask your grocer for Lendonderry. If he does not carry it send us \$1.00 for 7 packages and 20 famous recipes, postpaid.

Lendonderry of Canada,
224 Dominion Square Building,
Montreal, P.Q.

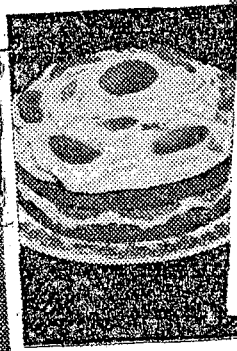
nates bothersome pains and plasters that make shoes fit tighter. It's antiseptic. Economical. At your nearest drug or toilet goods counter.

Freezone

complexions for those many years younger. Start with **MERCOLIZED WAX CREAM** today. At all cosmetic counters.

Give your face a lift with **TARK-ROOT BEAUTY MASQUE**. Wonderful after a long day or before a special date. Try it for movie star brightness.

NO SUGAR
...lots of
lusciousness!



MAGIC Peach Layer Cake

2 1/2 cups sifted cake flour
2 1/2 tsp. Magic Baking Powder
1/2 tsp. salt
1/2 cup shortening
1 cup white corn syrup
2 eggs, unbeaten
1/2 cup milk
1 tsp. vanilla
1/2 tsp. almond extract

Sift dry ingredients together 3 times. Cream shortening. Add syrup gradually, beating well after each addition. Add 1/2 of flour mixture. Blend well. Add eggs, one at a time; beat well after each. Add remaining flour mixture in thirds, alternately with milk in halves, beating well after each addition. Add flavoring. Bake in 2 greased lightly floured 8" layer cake pans at 375°F. until done. Top and fill layers with peach halves and whipped cream.

MADE IN CANADA



Mrs. Quality-wise
says:-

Here are two old favourites I would not be without. Used together or separately they are a delight in the kitchen and on the table.



CROWN BRAND
SYRUP

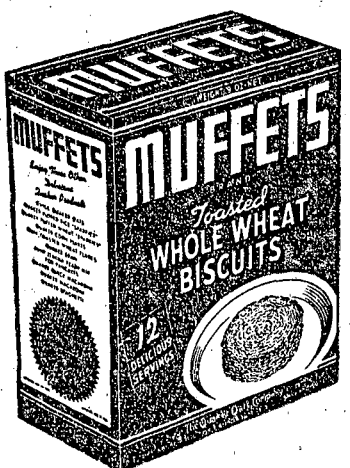
CANADA
CORN STARCH

The CANADA STARCH COMPANY LIMITED • Montreal • Toronto

Give
your family
the
"Whole-Grain"
They Need



DELICIOUS MUFFETS give you the nourishing whole-grain nutritionists say you should have every day! Exciting in flavour... rich and crunchy... MUFFETS are spun from ribbons of crispy whole wheat and contain wheat's body-building, energy-giving proteins, minerals and carbohydrates. Thrifty, too... servings cost less than a cent apiece.



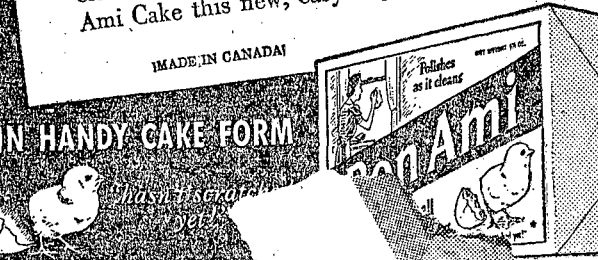
ORDER A PACKAGE OF
MUFFETS
FROM YOUR GROCER
TODAY!

The Onaker Oats Company of Canada Limited



NEW, FASTER way
to use **BON AMI**
-Cleans windows crystal-clear in seconds!

Here's the new, improved way to use your old friend, Bon Ami Cake. First, rub a damp cloth over the cake and apply a thin coating to the glass. Then wipe it off before it dries. Dirt disappears... windows sparkle... for Bon Ami polishes as it cleans! Leaves no oily, dust-catching film. Try Bon Ami Cake this new, easy way today!



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
- ARMY -

HQS 8696-1 FD 14 (DAG(B))

OTTAWA, 14 May 45

NO 165

THE MINISTER

SITUATION REPORT ON DISTURBANCES
as of 0930 hours 14 May 45

1. Ref Sit Rep No 164 regarding disturbances in Nova Scotia.
2. The DOC MD 6 reported by tele at 0915 hrs 14 May 45 that Halifax and all other points were very quiet last night and that a part of the Army personnel ref to in para 7 of Sit Rep No 160 have been returned to their home station after consultation with the local authorities. It is expected that more of them will be returned at an early date.
3. A Court of Inquiry with Major-General A C Spencer, CBE, ED, as president has been ordered to assemble to inquire into and report upon the disturbances at Halifax and Dartmouth. Two other Courts of Inquiry have been ordered to inquire into and report upon minor disturbances at Kentville and Yarmouth. These will commence their duties to-day.
4. The sixty members of C Pro C ref to in para 8 of Sit Rep No 162 will be held for duty in MD 6 in the meantime.
5. A further Sit Rep will be issued when more infm is received.

G. A. Walford
(A.E. Walford)
Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION:

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General	(1)
The Minister, Naval Services	(1)
Minister of National War Services	(1)
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister	(1)
Private Secy to the Prime Minister	(1)
Clerk of the Privy Council	(1)
DM(Army)	(1)
CGS	(1)
AG	(2)
DPR(Army)	(3)
The Commissioner R.C.M.P.	(1)
Director of Censorship	(1)



VER V AC NR 150

Adm

FROM COMMANDING SIX HALIFAX NS 111715P

TO SECRETARY N D H Q OTTAWA

GR 18 BT

54-27-63-7 Vol 2

A9210 RECEIPT ACKNOWLEDGED RANKS 8195 DATED 11 MAY 45



BT 11 2249P

1122032

ZMM B

BA

THIS IS AN ACTION COPY IF INCORRECTLY DELIVERED, COMPLETE BELOW AND RETURN TO A.S.O. 815 WOODS		
BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE

56685

851

2 Navy Men Sentenced For Looting at Halifax

Halifax, May 11 (Special).—Two sailors from Western Canada were sentenced to penitentiary terms here today as sequel to the city's disastrous VE-Day rioting. At the same time Acting Prime Minister J. L. Isley, after inspecting damage in the city's business section, announced that Mr. Justice R. L. McKellock of the Supreme Court of Canada, will conduct a judicial inquiry into the rioting.

PO. Keith Johnson of Regina was sentenced to five years in penitentiary on charges of theft and causing damage, and PO. Percy Sullivan of Saskatoon, was given three years' imprisonment. Witnesses told the court they saw Johnson break the plate-glass window of a store and hand out merchandise to Sullivan.

The Government, Mr. Isley said, also is exploring the possibility of taking "some appropriate steps" to relieve the financial distress of firms whose whole businesses were wrecked. He added that the Government was not trying to "dodge or shift any responsibility" which might justly belong to it.

Meanwhile, city police on a 24-hour alert, continued their task of rounding up straggling rioters, and extension of the curfew hour from eight o'clock to 10 p.m. was announced by Mayor Allan M. Butler. The confinement to barracks of all army personnel in Halifax area has been lifted and troops have been ordered to conform with the civilian curfew hour.

Few Soldiers Misbehaved

This afternoon Brig. D. A. White, DSO, district officer commanding Military District No. 6, issued a special district order to all troops under his command in which he expressed "gratification on the behavior of the great majority of the troops."

"It is unfortunately true," the order said, "that a few soldiers misbehaved themselves and by taking part in the disturbances brought discredit on their comrades. But in the main, members of the army behaved themselves in a soldierly manner and are to be commended."

Fifty more persons charged with theft, committing damage, breaking and entering, were picked up by police during the past 24 hours, bringing the total to 251 charged since Tuesday.

Police Chief J. J. Conrod reported continued excellent results from citizens reporting the whereabouts of looted goods.

A stream of resignations began pouring into Halifax service Hostels today from indignant women, many of whom had been attending canteens since the beginning of the war. Most resignations explained that while canteens were for the use of all services, naval personnel made up by far the greater number.

One of the letters from a hostess, Margaret Wright, said "after the disgraceful display Canada's Navy has made in the past two days, I no longer care to have the dubious honor of serving them."

One of the city's large canteens had to cancel its regular dances because hostesses refused to attend, but heads of service clubs said today they would carry on as long as they could obtain anybody to work.

It was reported in Ottawa that Vice-Admiral George C. Jones, chief of the Canadian Naval Staff and former officer commanding the dis-

trict, would come to Halifax to take over from Rear Admiral L. W. Murray. It is understood Rear-Admiral Murray will go on leave in order to prepare his case for presentation to any inquiry that may be held.

Incendiarism Suspected

Fire department officials have begun investigation into a fire that caused \$10,000 damage on the city's second main street, Gottingen, last night. The possibility of incendiarism as an outgrowth of this week's rioting has not been ruled out, but firemen had not uncovered any evidence so far that the blaze was deliberately set.

In other Nova Scotia points police were on the alert to prevent further outbreaks of rioting which flared up last night. Sydney remains under a 9 o'clock curfew to night to prevent a sequel to last night's episode, when 30 windows were smashed and a liquor store was looted. The worst disturbances were in the Town of Dominion, where men, women and children stormed the liquor store and two policemen were injured. Police patrols have been strengthened in Kentville, Liverpool, Yarmouth, Sydney and Glace Bay.

P.A. m. j. h.
J.E. ROBERTS
COLONEL
D.O. ADMIN.
MAY 12 1945

13 May 45

District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6,
Halifax, N.S.

DISTURBANCES - Halifax

Ref Ranks 8352 and further telephone
conversation Brig.Ferguson and Brig.White, attached are:

- (a) Draft of Convening Order.
- (b) Draft of Terms of Reference.

2. Instructions for the setting up of the
principal Court and of the other Courts are contained in the
telegram above-referenced.

3. As mentioned to you over the telephone,
it is important that witnesses be warned and made available
immediately and that male stenographers be provided in suffi-
cient numbers to ensure that the evidence can be transcribed
immediately and that there shall be no delay on this account.

4. This letter is being handed to Major
Carroll for transmission to you.

A.E. Walford
Rug

(A.E. Walford)
Major-General,
Adjutant-General.

Encl.

JEM/MD

M. F. M. 13
100M-5-44 (44)
K. P. 7543 H.Q. 1771-15-1211

HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol 2
(Adm)

CIPHER

ARMY MESSAGE

FILE

(OUTGOING)

OTTAWA, Ontario
PLACE

12 May 45
DATE

District Officer Commanding,
Military District No 6,
HALIFAX, N.S.

RANKS 8352

CONFIDENTIAL

PARA ONE

REFERENCE DISTURBANCES HALIFAX AREA AND REFERENCE TELEPHONE
CONVERSATION BRIG FERGUSON - BRIG WHITE TODAY

PARA TWO

MAJ GEN SPENCER AND MAJ CARROLL WILL ARRIVE HALIFAX 1955
MRS THIRTEEN MAY 45 B; PLANE stop SECURE HOTEL RESERVATIONS
AND ARRANGE ANY NECESSARY TRANSPORTATION AT YOUR END

PARA THREE

PRINCIPAL COURT OF INQUIRY TO BE SET UP BY YOU TO ASSEMBLE
AT HALIFAX AT CALL OF PRESIDENT FOR THE PURPOSE OF INQUIRING
INTO AND REPORTING UPON A MATTER TO BE PLACED BEFORE IT stop
EVIDENCE TO BE TAKEN ON OATH stop FORM OF ORDER WILL BE
HANDLED TO YOU BY MAJ CARROLL ON ARRIVAL stop TERMS OF
REFERENCE TO COURT READ AS FOLLOWS QUOTE/MAJ GEN AC
SPENCER CBE ED COMMANDER CAMP BORDEN ONT YOU HAVE BEEN
APPOINTED AS PRESIDENT OF A COURT OF INQUIRY COMPOSED AS
INDICATED IN CONVENING ORDER ATTACHED HERETO WHICH WILL
ASSEMBLE AT HALIFAX NS AT THE CALL OF THE PRESIDENT FOR THE
PURPOSE OF INQUIRING INTO AND REPORTING UPON A MATTER TO
BE PLACED BEFORE IT stop

.....2/

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MUST BE SENT IN CIPHER

IF THIS MESSAGE IS LIABLE
TO BE PUBLISHED,
INDICATE BELOW.

DEGREE OF PRIORITY

TIME OF ORIGIN

SIGNED.....

THIS MESSAGE WILL BE TRANSMITTED IN CIPHER. CONFIRMATION COPIES MUST NOT BE SENT BY MAIL.

SINGLE FORM FOR CIPHER MESSAGE

000218

M. F. M. 318
50M-5-41 (44)
K. P. 710 H.Q. 1775-31-203

CIPHER

ARMY MESSAGE

FILE

(OUTGOING)

YOU WILL INQUIRE INTO AND REPORT UPON THE CIRCUMSTANCES CONNECTED WITH ALL DISTURBANCES OF THE PEACE INVOLVING ARMY PERSONNEL IN THE CITY OF HALIFAX NS AND DARTMOUTH NS ON OR ABOUT THE 7TH MAY 1945 AND SUBSEQUENT THERETO stop YOUR INQUIRY AND REPORT SHOULD INCLUDE THE FOLLOWING (A) THE TIME PLACE AND NATURE OF ALL DISTURBANCES (B) WHETHER ANY MILITARY PERSONNEL WERE INVOLVED IN ANY BREACHES OF DISCIPLINE AND IF SO THE NAMES OF SUCH PERSONS INVOLVED AND THE CONDUCT OF SUCH PERSONS (C) THE PRECAUTIONS TAKEN PRIOR TO SUCH DISTURBANCES (D) THE ACTION TAKEN DURING SUCH DISTURBANCES (E) THE ACTION TAKEN AFTERWARDS TO ENSURE AGAINST THEIR REPETITION (F) SUGGESTIONS AND RECOMMENDATIONS AS TO DISCIPLINARY ACTION OR OTHERWISE stop THE EVIDENCE IS TO BE TAKEN ON OATH stop THE COURT WILL SIT AT SUCH TIMES AND PLACES AS THE PRESIDENT MAY DIRECT stop THE PROCEEDINGS ARE TO BE FORWARDED TO THE DOC MD 6 IN TRIPLICATE UNQUOTE

PARA FOUR

THE PRINCIPAL COURT TO BE COMPOSED OF MAJ GEN SPENCER PRESIDENT BRIG AR ROY AND TWO ADDITIONAL MEMBERS TO BE NAMED BY YOU NOT BELOW FIELD RANK WITH MAJ CARROLL AS LEGAL ADVISER DETAILED PURSUANT TO KR (CAN) 627

PARA FIVE

IN ADDITION TO THE PRINCIPAL COURT TO BE ASSEMBLED AT HALIFAX YOU WILL ASSEMBLE A COURT OF INQUIRY FOR THE KENTVILLE INCIDENT AND ANOTHER FOR THE YARMOUTH INCIDENT

PARA SIX

FORM OF ORDER AND TERMS OF REFERENCE TO BE AS FOR PRINCIPAL COURT

ADJUTANT-GENERAL

G. Ferguson
Adjutant-General

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MUST BE SENT IN CIPHER
Adjutant-General

IF THIS MESSAGE IS LIABLE TO BE PUBLISHED, INDICATE BELOW.

DEGREE OF PRIORITY

Important

TIME OF ORIGIN

1945

SIGNED

THIS MESSAGE WILL BE TRANSMITTED IN CIPHER.

CONFIRMATION COPIES NOT BE SENT BY MAIL.

SINGLE FORM FOR CIPHER MESSAGE

000219

MEMORANDUM

Department of National Defence

TO: A.G.

HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol 2

Ottawa, Ontario, 12 May 45

Disturbances - Halifax, N.S., etc.
Court of Inquiry

You have requested my advice concerning the form of the Convening Order and Terms of Reference for the Court of Inquiry to be held at Halifax, N.S. to enquire into and report upon the disturbances of the peace at Halifax, N.S. and other places on May 7, 1945 and subsequent thereto.

2. It is considered that it is advisable that this Court of Inquiry be convened by the DOC MD 6.

3. Attached hereto, as requested, is a draft Convening Order and draft Terms of Reference which have been approved by me, after consultation with Brig G.A. Ferguson, DAG(B) and Col J.E. MacDermid, D of Adm.

4. It is suggested that the same form of Convening Order and Terms of Reference be used for the smaller Courts of Inquiry to be convened by the DOC MD 6 in connection with similar disturbances at Kentville and Yarmouth, N.S.

D.Rdm.
Fractm.
Sa Pym
FERGUSON
BRIGADIER
D.A.G. (B)
MAY 12 1945

LCC:DZ

R.J. Orde
(R.J. Orde)
Brigadier,
Judge Advocate General

80

ORDERS BY BRIG A.A. WHITE
DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING MD 6

A Court of Inquiry, composed as under, will assemble at Halifax, N.S. at the call of the President, for the purpose of inquiring into and reporting upon a matter to be placed before it.

President Maj Gen A.C. Spencer, CBE ED,
 Commander, Camp Borden, Ont.

Members Brig A.R. Roy, OBE

Assistant Maj L.C. Carroll,
from Office DAJAG, NDHQ
of JAG

The evidence is to be taken on oath. The court will sit at such times and places as the President may direct. The Proceedings, in triplicate, are to be forwarded to the DOC MD 6.

Halifax, N.S.
14th May, 1945.

TERMS OF REFERENCE

TO

Maj Gen A.C. Spencer, CBE, ED.
Commander, Camp Borden, Ont.

You have been appointed as President of a Court of Inquiry composed as indicated in Convening Order attached hereto, which will assemble at Halifax, N.S. at the call of the President, for the purpose of inquiring into and reporting upon a matter to be placed before it.

2. You will inquire into and report upon the circumstances connected with all disturbances of the peace involving ~~any~~ personnel in the City of Halifax, N.S. and Dartmouth, N.S. on or about the 7th May, 1945 and subsequent thereto.

3. Your inquiry and report should include the following:

1. The time, place and nature of all disturbances.
2. Whether any military personnel were involved in any breaches of discipline, and if so, the names of such persons involved, and the conduct of such persons.
3. The precautions taken prior to such disturbances.
4. The action taken during such disturbances.
5. The action taken afterwards to ensure against their repetition.
6. Suggestions and recommendations as to disciplinary action or otherwise.

4. The evidence is to be taken on oath.

5. The Court will sit at such times and places as the President may direct.

6. The Proceedings are to be forwarded to the DOC MD 6, in triplicate.

M E M O R A N D U M

Department of National Defence

TO: D. Admin

HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol 2 (DAG(B))

Ottawa, 12 May 45

INQUIRY INTO DISTURBANCES IN NOVA SCOTIA

1. The Adjutant-General has directed that one Court of Inquiry shall be set up by the DOC MD 6, headed by Major-General A.C. Spencer as Chairman, with Brig. Arthur Roy as one Member and with two other Members to be appointed by Brig. White, not lower than Field rank. Major L.C. Carroll, DAJAG, NDHQ will be detailed to assist the Court, pursuant to K.R.(Can) para 627. The terms of reference will be drafted by the JAG.
2. Major-General Spencer is flying from ~~London~~ ^{Toronto} to Halifax and it will be necessary to communicate with him at Camp Borden to ascertain when he wishes to leave ~~London~~ ^{Toronto} and then arrange a must-ride through the CGS. Major Carroll will proceed on the same plane from Ottawa to Halifax with Major-General Spencer and will take with him all the necessary written orders, etc.
3. Either the A.G. or the DAG(B) will meet Major-General Spencer at the Airport at Ottawa and give him any further information which Major-General Spencer may desire and which may be available. A must-ride will be arranged by the CGS's office for Major Carroll.
4. The Convening Order will be issued by DOC MD 6 as the JAG has advised that this is the legal way to convene the Court. The JAG will draft the Convening Order for this and any other Court of Inquiry which will be set up by the DOC MD 6 with reference to these disturbances and Major Carroll will, before returning to Ottawa, check the proceedings of the other Courts to ensure that they are complete and in order.
5. DOC MD 6 should be ordered to have all arrangements made for the Court, all witnesses warned and ready to give their evidence so that no time will be lost to have it presented to the Court.
6. DOC MD 6 should be ordered to supply three male shorthand reporters, capable of taking evidence in Court and transcribing it accurately, and if these are not available arrangements should be made.
7. Major-General Spencer's Court will inquire into and report upon the disturbances in Halifax and Dartmouth.
8. At 1615 hrs. 12 May, I telephoned MD 6 to ascertain definitely at what points, other than Halifax and Dartmouth, there should be Courts of Inquiry set up. He stated very definitely that Army personnel had not been involved anywhere except Kentville and Yarmouth, and he recommended that Courts of Inquiry be set up at these two places and said that he would proceed to do this as soon as he received the terms of reference from NDHQ. I informed him that these terms of reference were now being drawn and would be given to him at the earliest possible moment by immediate Army message.

- 2 -

9. I informed him of the plan to have one Court headed by Major-General Spencer do Halifax and Dartmouth and informed him that Brig. Roy would be a member and Major Carroll was going as Counsel and that the DOC MD 6 is to appoint two Members, not below Field rank. I also directed him to make the necessary arrangements for witnesses, Court reporters, etc.

10. DOC MD 6 should be asked to arrange for hotel accommodation for Major-General Spencer and Major Carroll.

11. Will you take the necessary steps to give effect to these orders, please.



(G.A. Ferguson)
Brigadier,
DAG(B)

GAF/MD

76
000224

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
- ARMY -

HQS 8696-1 FD 14 (DAG(B))

THE MINISTER

OTTAWA, 12 May 45

SITUATION REPORT ON DISTURBANCES
as of 1000 hours 12 May 45

NO 164

1. Ref Sit Rep No 163 regarding disturbances in Nova Scotia.
2. The DOC MD 6 has reported by tele at 0945 hrs this date that Halifax was very quiet last night. Army personnel and some Navy personnel were released from CB and were on the streets. Everything was orderly. The DOC and his staff went around the city after curfew(2200 hrs) and found everything in good shape.
3. It was noted that the Halifax Civil Emergency Corps, Aux Police Branch was on duty and indicated the ability of the civil authorities to place Aux Police on the streets in case of an emergency.
4. The Mayor informed the DOC that the next curfew will be 0030 hrs 13 May 45 and thereafter it is expected to cease.
5. The theatres are opening to-night and a service dance and entertainment is taking place at the Forum under the patronage of the Lieutenant-Governor of Nova Scotia who will be present.
6. It was reported that the liquor store at New Waterford was set on fire but it was extinguished before much damage was done. No service tps were concerned in this incident.
7. With ref to para 7 of Sit Rep No 163 it is now reported that no service personnel were involved in the looting of the liquor store at Dominion on the night of 10 May 45 when all the beer was taken. The hard liquor had been removed by the Liquor Commission as a precautionary measure.
8. The general sit is reported to be very much improved throughout the province and the DOC has directed Courts of Inquiry to inquire into and report upon the incidents at all places where Army personnel have been involved in any way.
9. A further Sit Rep will be issued when more infm is received.

G. Ferguson
(A.E. Walford)
Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION:

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General	(1)
The Minister, Naval Services	(1)
Minister of National War Services	(1)
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister	(1)
Private Secy to the Prime Minister	(1)
Clerk of the Privy Council	(1)
DM(Army)	(1)
CGS	(1)
AG	(1)
DPR(Army)	(1)
The Commissioner RCMP	(1)
Director of Censorship	(1)

25-
000225

NOTES OF TELE-CONVERSATION AT 0915 HRS
BRIG GA FERGUSON - BRIG DA WHITE - HALIFAX

12 May

Brig White stated that the sit was very quiet last night. There were no bad results from lifting the CB or from any other sources. The curfew was at 2200 hrs.

2. He states further that after 2200 hrs they went around the town and found everything in good shape. It was pleasing to Brig White to find a large number of the Halifax Civil Emergency Corps Auxiliary Police Branch on duty. They wore steel helmets and overalls and had they been on duty on V-E Day they might have been very useful.

3. There was really nothing else to report from Halifax.

4. At New Waterford it was reported that the liquor store was set on fire during thenight but the fire was extinguished. Some arrests of civilians were made after the curfew. No service tps were concerned in the disturbance.

5. The Mayor has informed Brig White that the curfew to-night is at 0030 hrs and it is expected that there will be no curfew after to-night.

6. The theatres are opening to-night and a service dance and entertainment is taking place at the Forum to-night under the patronage of the Lieutenant Governor of Nova Scotia who will be present with his wife who has the support of all services and the Mayor.

7. Brig White has taken the necessary action to investigate the disturbances by way of Courts of Inquiry.



CANADA

A I R M A I L

IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE

No. H.150-1-2 (G1)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

Headquarters, M.D. 6,
Halifax, N.S., 12 May 1945 5

313892

The Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ont.

V-E Day

CENTRAL REGISTRY Army	
CONF. SEC.	
89142-1	
MAY 14 1945	
File	<i>Adm. 57</i>
Refd. to	<i>Int. al</i>

Herewith report of the activities in the Halifax
Area during 11 May 45, as noted by the G.S.O. II (Int).

D. A. White
(D. A. WHITE) Brigadier,
District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6

V-E DAY DISORDERS IN M.D. 6

Friday, 11 May 45

Halifax was quiet this morning.

During the forenoon the D.O.C. issued Special District Order No. 703 (copy attached as Appx. A).

At 1030 hours the D.O.C. was in touch with the Duty Officer, Defended Port of Sydney, by telephone.

At 1205 hours the Chief of Police, Halifax, informed the A.A. & Q.M.G. by telephone that the curfew had been extended until 2200 hours. The Services conformed, and confinement to barracks of all army personnel was lifted (see Appx. B (1)). Restrictions on leave and furlough to outside points were now lifted. (see Appx. B (2)). On Saturday, 12th May, service personnel and citizens will be allowed to remain on the streets until 0030 hours, 13th May.

Authority was received from N.D.H.Q. to try service personnel found in possession of loot, under the Army Act. Those arrested by Civil Police will normally be tried by them. At 1230 hours the D.O.C. visited No. 37 & 38 Provost Coy, plus 60 Provosts who were flown in as reinforcements from Camp Borden, when he expressed appreciation for their good work under recent difficult conditions.

At 1330 hours, all ranks of No. 6 District Depot were paraded in Drill Hall where the D.O.C. addressed the group, praising them for their good behaviour and explaining the necessity for imposing recent restrictions.

At 1600 hours the D.O.C. addressed in similar manner all ranks of No. 6 Ordnance Depot and No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E., personnel from both groups having been called upon for extra duties during the disturbances. At 2346 hours D.A.P.M. and Security Patrols reported everything quiet in Halifax.

D.A.P.M. reported that Chief of Police concurred in the plan to reduce scale of proccosts on duty to 1/5 strength.

The Halifax Civil Emergency Corps had 200 on duty during night 11-12 May.

The curfew in Halifax has been generally well

-continued-

- 2 -

V-E Day Disorders, M.D. 6

observed.

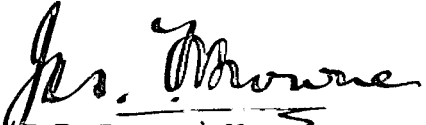
Saturday, 12 May 45

At 0945 hours it was reported that the liquor store at New Waterford was set on fire during the night, but was soon extinguished. Damage was slight.

A number of arrests were made in New Waterford after the curfew. All were civilians and among them were a number of prominent citizens who were drunk. Extra patrols of army personnel were on duty all night.

New Waterford was reported quiet this morning.

Attached as Appx. C is a clipping from the HALIFAX CHRONICLE, 12th May; it will give some indication of the manner in which offenders are being dealt with by Magistrate Inglis in the City Police Court.


(J.F. Browne) Major,
G.S.O. 2 (Int) M.D. 6.

appx "A"

D I S T R I C T O R D E R

B Y

BRIGADIER D.A. WHITE, D.S.O.

DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING, M.D.No.6.

HALIFAX, N.S. 11 May 45.

SPECIAL DISTRICT ORDER

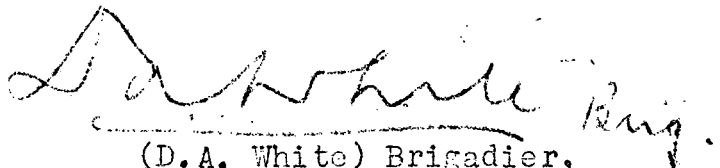
703

Now that the situation in Halifax and vicinity is returning to normal, I have reason to hope that the Curfew will be set at a later hour and therefore the Confinement to Barracks lifted and hours for the troops made to conform to those of civilians.

2. I wish to take this opportunity to express my gratification on the behaviour of the great majority of the troops. It is, unfortunately, true that a few soldiers misbehaved themselves and by taking part in the disturbance brought discredit on their comrades but in the main, members of the Army behaved themselves in a soldiery manner and are to be commended.

3. I wish also to express particular pride in the action of the Provost Corps and the Officers and ORs who assisted them. Their work was most difficult and was well done. I call on all ranks to conduct themselves in a disciplined and considerate manner to the Citizens of Halifax who have suffered great loss as a result of the recent disturbance.

4. In conclusion, I would point out to all that although in uniform they are still citizens and as such it is their duty at all times to obey civil authorities and help to maintain the peace.


(D.A. White) Brigadier,
District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6.

69

HC 120-2-1 (AQ)

Copy B (1)

M E S S A G E

COMMANDER HALIFAX FORTRESS
OC NO SIX DISTRICT DEPOT
OC A.23 C & AAA TC
OC NO SIX DISTRICT COY RC SIGS
OC EMBARKATION TRANSIT UNIT
OC A A REINF CAMP
BARRACK MASTER NEW WELLINGTON BKS
OC NO SIX VTS
OC NO 10 ADM UNIT CWAC
OC NO 17 ADM UNIT CWAC
OC NO 106 DEPOT COY CWAC
OC 36 (RES) BDE GP
OC NO 6 COY ES & W RCE
OC NO 6 COY RCASC
OC NO 6 COY RCOO
OC NO 6 COY RCEME
OC NO 1 PORT COY RCASC
OC NO 26 COY CDC)
OC NO 36 COY CDC) DDO
OC NO 50 COY CDC)
DISTRICT MEDICAL OFFICER
DISTRICT DENTAL OFFICER
DISTRICT PAYMASTER
COGSWELL STREET HOSPITAL
DAPM

I M P O R T A N T

A 9149 REFERENCE O 702 DATED 5 MAY 45 CONFINEMENT
TO BARRACKS NOW LIFTED STOP CURFEW WILL BE AT 2200 HRS
STOP ALL TROOPS WILL CONFORM TO CURFEW

HALIFAX NS
11 1230 P MAY 45

COMMANDING SIX

P. J. [Signature]
[Signature]

68

App B (2)

M E S S A G E
- - - - -

HC 120-2-1 (A9)

COMMANDER HALIFAX FORTRESS
OC NO SIX DISTRICT DEPOT
OC A-23 C & AAA TC
OC NO SIX DISTRICT COY RC SIGS
OC EMBARKATION TRANSIT UNIT
OC AA REINF CAMP
BARRACK MASTER NEW WELLINGTON BKS
OC NO SIX VTS
OC NO 10 ADM UNIT CWAC
OC NO 17 ADM UNIT CWAC
OC NO 106 DEPOT COY CTAC
OC 36 (RES) BDE GP
OC NO 6 COY ES & W RCE
OC NO 6 COY RCASC
OC NO 6 COY RCOC
OC NO 6 COY RCENE
OC NO 1 PORT COY RCASC
OC NO 26 COY CDC)
OC NO 36 COY CDC) DDO
OC NO 50 COY CDC)
DISTRICT MEDICAL OFFICER
DISTRICT DENTAL OFFICER
DISTRICT PAYMASTER
GOGSWELL STREET HOSPITAL

I M P O R T A N T

A 9125 REFERENCE O 782 DATED 8 MAY 45 STOP RESTRICTION
ON LEAVE AND FURLOUGH TO OUTSIDE POINTS IS NOW LIFTED
NORMAL LEAVE AND FURLOUGH FOR PERSONNEL PROCEEDING OUTSIDE
HALIFAX MAY BE GRANTED

HALIFAX NS
111105P HRS MAY 45

COMMANDING SIX



67
6
000233

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

Four V-E Day Riots Sent To Penitentiary

Magistrate Scores Lack Of Conception Of Naval Tradition

Navy men who have lived so far from the sea that they have no conception of the naval tradition drew acid comment from Magistrate R. E. Inglis in City Police Court yesterday as he handed out prison terms of up to five years to four violators of the tradition in connection with the V-E Day riots here.

James C. Jones Dies At 74

Following a short illness, the death occurred last evening in the Halifax Infirmary of James Clarence Jones, 142 Morris street, for nearly 30 years Grand Secretary of the Masonic Order in Nova Scotia, and prominent in many other organizations and societies.

Mr. Jones was born in Halifax on March 14, 1871, son of George W. and Eliza J. Jones. He was educated at Morris street school and the Halifax academy. He started in business for himself at the age of 17.

He was well-known throughout the Maritime provinces as the representative of the Toronto Type Foundry and in the early period of his life he served as president of the Maritime Commercial Travelers' Association. In later years he carried on a successful real estate business.

An active member of St. Paul's church, he served for more than 25 years as vestryman and church warden and was a lay representative in the Diocesan Synod. He was past president of St. Paul's Home for Girls, the Halifax Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor, the Halifax County Anti-Tuberculosis League, St. George's Society, Halifax Welfare Bureau and the Home for Aged Men.

It was probably as a Freemason that Mr. Jones was best known. Joining the order 52 years ago, he became Master of St. Andrew's Lodge No. 1 in 1889, was elected Deputy Grand Master in 1916, appointed assistant to Colonel Thomas Mowbray, then Grand Secretary, in 1915 and succeeded him in 1917. In the Scottish Rite he attained to Hon. Membership in the Supreme Council for Canada in 1918 and was elected Deputy Provincial Grand Master of the Royal Order of Scotland in 1926.

He married Miss Henrietta R. MacIntosh in September, 1894. She predeceased him in 1935.

He had two sons and one daughter. One son is Vice Admiral George C. Jones, CB., R.C.N., Chief of the Canadian Naval Staff at Ottawa; the other was Arthur Gordon Jones, who died in Bermuda during the First Great War. Mrs. Evelyn M. Taylor, wife of Commodore Cuthbert, R. H. Taylor in charge of Naval operations in Newfoundland command, is his daughter. Two sisters also survive, Miss I. B. Jones and Mrs. Sophia Gray, both of Teignmouth, England; also one brother, Charles, residing in Boston.

Mr. Jones was untiring in his efforts for the organizations with which he was identified, always giving his best. He will be especially missed by the Association for the Poor and by St. Paul's church and it will be exceedingly difficult to find a successor to him in the office of General Secretary of the Grand Lodge with which he combined the duties of secretary of the Freemason's Home at Windsor.

Plans for his funeral await the

Petty Officer Keith Johnson, R. C. N. V. R., supply assistant, of Saskatoon, Sask., was sentenced to a five-year Dorchester term, accompanied by a verbal blast from the bench, after he was found guilty of breaking and entering Mosher's Luncheonette, 76 Granville street, last Tuesday and the theft therefrom of a quantity of cigarettes, tobacco and novelties, valued at under \$25. Assistant Crown Prosecutor Parker T. Hickey told the magistrate that Johnson was one of the ringleaders in that section and that he had it on reliable information that the Petty Officer was responsible for smashing a half-block of windows.

Johnson's pal in the episode, Petty Officer Percy Sullivan, of Regina, Sask., who witnesses said egged Johnson on in his vandalism, drew a three-year term in Dorchester after he had tried to soften his sentence by telling the magistrate that he had always held responsible positions and had been bonded since the age of 20. Mr. Hickey also characterized Sullivan as a ringleader in the destruction.

RATING SWAYS

Stanley M. Stoppa, RCN rating of Manitoba, closed his eyes and swayed when he heard Magistrate Inglis hand down a two-year term in Dorchester after he had pleaded guilty to wilfully committing damage last Monday by breaking a plate glass window worth \$100, the property of the MacDonald Furniture Company, Gottingen street. Mr. Hickey told the court that Stoppa was one of the men who started the wave of rioting.

"These foolish things gather weight like a snowball," said the magistrate. "I don't see any reason to deal any more leniently with you than the others."

Gerald J. Lajoie, Montreal naval rating found guilty on a charge of breaking a plate glass window worth \$75 in the Youths' Grill, 560 Barrington street on Tuesday also went up to Dorchester for a two-year stretch.

Edward Newell, a civilian, no stated address, was sent up for two years also on pleading guilty to a charge of breaking two plate glass windows in the Salvation Army hostel at 220 Argyle street. Newell threw three pop bottles through the windows, Mr. Hickey informed the court, expressing the opinion also that "he isn't much good to the community."

"FAR FROM THE SEA"

Magistrate Inglis showed considerable vehemence in sentencing Johnson and Sullivan.

"You both stand here as officers of a class in the Navy," said he, "members of an organization with a great tradition. During the past five years a great many like you—hundreds in fact—have been in this court; men who have been so far away from the sea that you have never heard of the naval tradition."

HOUSE AT WOODSIDE, SIX ROOMS bath, Nine years old, double garage, \$5200. Possession July 1st. Apply forenoons or evenings. B. O. Bishop. 6-5482. cs 3 6i

HOUSES, FLATS TO LET 81

EIGHT ROOM HOUSE COMPLETELY furnished to sub let for five months. The rent must be paid five months in advance. Phone 4-9138. cs 11 3i

HOUSES, FLATS FOR SALE 88

HOUSE, JUBILEE ROAD, FIFTEEN rooms. Furnished. Good investment. \$11,500. Box 755 Chronicle-Star. cs 12 3i

FARMS FOR SALE 89

FARM FOR SALE AT EAST UNIAKE. About 200 acres, 30 cleared, balance woodland. Small house and barn, also one pair horses. Apply W. J. Hibbits, 91 Young street, Halifax. 4-3467. cs 12 12i

LOTS FOR SALE 90

FOR SALE - CAMP SITES. LAKE Frontage. Write Box 758. cs 7 6i

EIGHT NICE BUILDING LOTS LOCATION Spryfield, never failing spring on property, also quantity of second hand lumber. For particulars see O. H. Parsons, 19 Edinburgh street, after 6 p. m. cs 11 6i

AUDITING - ACCOUNTING 97

ACCOUNTING—BOOKKEEPING Income Tax Papers N. M. Swain - B. W. Sawyer Office 102 Hollis Street—3-6851

BARRISTERS 96

GEORGE E. HARRIS BARRISTER 217 HOLLIS ST

STEWART SMITH, MACKEN and ROGERS Barristers, Solicitors, etc. 319 Roy Building

PEARSON, RUTLEDGE & DONALD 60

E. F. CRAGG Barristers, Solicitors, Etc. Chronicle Building

LOANS 99

FOR YOU IN KINGS, HANTS, DIGBY and Annapolis Counties. Over a decade of friendly service. General Finance Corporation (Kentville) Limited, Kentville, Nova Scotia. cs 5 26i

PERSONAL LOANS 100

MARITIME FINANCE

LIMITED
LOANS
\$50.-\$500

A Simple, Convenient Plan

QUICK CONFIDENTIAL SERVICE Endorsers Not Necessarily Required

Inquire For Further Particulars and Rates

All applications considered

PHONE OR CALL AT OFFICE FOR PARTICULARS

MARBLE BUILDING

452 Barrington Street
Halifax, Nova Scotia 3-8371

TAILORS 103

T. M. VAUGHAN LTD. Manufacturing—Naval Uniforms 576 Barrington Street 3-7714

INSURANCE 105

ALFRED J. BELL & CO. LTD. General Insurance 452 Barrington Street. Phone 3-7291 cs 5 13w

R. K. KELLEY & COMPANY General Insurance 78 Granville Street. 3-6423 cs 22 ti

GROCERIES - 107

Meats - Fish

A Business or Professional Service not advertised in these columns today—call Joan Bell 3-8225. Complete information on competent firms and individuals who can perform almost any service is available and Joan Bell will gladly help you

CLASSIFIED RATES DIAL 3-8225

Including Publication in Both The Halifax Chronicle and Halifax Daily Star
Requiring Cash within Five Days after First Insertion

4c per word 8c per word

For One Day 12c per word For Three Days 40c per word

For Six Days For 26 Days

No Ad Taken For Less Than the Cost of 8 Words (Word Rate Does Not Apply to Commercial Advertisements) When counting words in your Ad include Name Address, Telephone Number or Box—Chronicle.

BIRTHS, ENGAGEMENTS, MARRIAGES, DEATHS, FUNERAL NOTICES, CARDS OF THANKS and IN MEMORIAM VERSES taken over the Telephone, by Mail or at Business Office Corner of Granville and Prince streets

For insertion in both The Chronicle and The Star one day \$1.00. In Cards of Thanks, lists of floral offerings, cards or lengthy verses, etc., first 100 words 2c per word, additional words at 1c per word.

PHONE 3-8221

Or Visit Chronicle Office.

Cor. Prince and Granville Streets

Ads taken until 9 p. m. for insertion following day; and until 9 a. m. for insertion same day.

Yearly Classified Contract Rates Furnished on Request.

TIDES

SATURDAY, MAY 12, 1945

Sun Rises 4.34 a. m. Sun Sets 7.19 p. m. High Tide 8.16 a. m.—8.30 p. m. Low Tide 2.25 a. m.—2.39 p. m. Yarmouth—High tide 10.46 a. m.—11.07 p. m. Low tide 4.27 a. m.—4.49 p. m.

Saint John—High tide 11.53 a. m. 27.4 feet—0.00 p. m. Low tide 5.42 a. m.—0.2 feet—6.04 p. m. 0.9 feet.

For Shelburne add 55 minutes to minutes for high tides and 2 for low tide. Liscomb subtract 11 and 5. Jeddore subtract 0.06 minutes for high tides, Parrsboro add 0.53 minutes for Canso subtract 6 and 4. Guysboro add for high tides and 2 for low for high— for high and subtract 14 minutes for low tides

Digby Pier for high water subtract 0.18 from Saint John times for low subtract 0.17 minutes. Windsor, add 6 and 18. Louisburg subtract 8 minutes tide and subtract 0.03 minutes for low. high and add 0.57 minutes for low.

NEW MOON FIRST QUARTER FULL MOON LAST QUARTER



May 11—May 18—May 26—May 5
Perigee May 10—Apogee May 22

Milland In Wet Role For "Lost Weekend"

HOLLYWOOD — Statistical footnote to all the familiar explanations for the whiskey shortage:

A recapitulation shows that the script of "The Lost Weekend", directed by Billy Wilder at Paramount, called on Ray Milland to dispatch 11 quarts and two pints of rye, as well as 54 straight "shots" and four gin vermouths over the bar in the course of the five-day binge which provides the theme for novelist Charles Jackson's powerful treatise.

Milland, in real life, is an abstainer.



A I R M A I L

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

132015

313846

The Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ont.

V-E Day

Herewith report of the activities in the Halifax
Area during 10 May 45, as noted by the G.S.O. II (Int).

MAY 15 7:45 PM



RECEIVED
A. G. CONTRE

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information
No. H.150-1-2 (G1)

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6
Halifax, N.S., 11 May, 1945

9142-1
MAY 14 1945
File
Chgd. to *abrain 54*
Referred to *2nd AG*

D. A. White
(D. A. WHITE), Brigadier,
District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6

65



V-E DAY DISORDERS IN M.D. 6.

Notes by G.S.O.2 (Int)

Tuesday, 8 May 45

The following items are included to complete the record of this day.

At 1705 hrs Lt.-Col. North, A.A. & Q.M.G., telephoned to Brigadier Ferguson, A.G.'s Branch in Ottawa, stating that we were in trouble here and that we were calling troops in off the street, also that a force had been ordered to stand by in Debert.

At 2300 hrs Brig. Ferguson instructed the D.O.C. by telephone not to act until he had received a requisition in writing from the Attorney-General.

Wednesday, 9 May 45

Further notes on meeting held in D.O.C.'s office at 1700 hrs at which Heads of Services, Mayor of Halifax, Chief of Police, Mr. Beazley, Executive Assistant to the Attorney-General, Assistant-Commissioner Eames, R.C.M.P., Col. Duncanson i/c Admin, were present.

The Mayor raised the question as to what action should be taken in the event of a major outbreak, and stated that the Police would be armed and carry night-sticks. The Mayor and Chief of Police stated that civilians would be strictly handled.

Commissioner Eames asked for clarification of what action was being taken to control Merchant Seamen. The Admiral replied that they were confined to their ships.

The R.C.M.P. agreed to augment the Civic Police.

At 1715 hrs the D.O.C. ordered Major Chisholme, No.60 C.A.(B) T.C., Yarmouth, to C.B. the troops now. This would have to be removed later.

Thursday, 10 May 45

At 0950 hrs Brig. Ferguson called the D.O.C. on the telephone from N.D.H.Q. re certain aspects of Aid to Civil Power.

At 1120 hrs the D.O.C. met with District Staff Officers, Fortress Commander, Lt.-Col. A. Thomson, -OC Debert troops, Commander E.P. Shaver, -RCNVR, Staff Officer, Chief of Staff (Admin). At

- 2 -

V-E Day Disorders M.D.6 - continued.

this meeting all aspects of Aid to Civil Power were discussed, and complete instructions given to all concerned. (Copy of Minutes attached as Appendix "A".) During this meeting the D.O.C. was called to the telephone to speak to Brig. Orde, N.D.H.Q., who clarified points dealing with the question of Magistrates accompanying Detachments. This is covered in Minutes above mentioned.

Major Chisholme, No.60 C.A.(B) T.C., telephoned at 1130 hrs re disorders in Yarmouth during the night of 8-9 May. The party responsible for the break-in of the liquor store consisted of about 75 men, mostly soldiers. A few civilians and RCAF personnel were in the crowd and shared in the results, although they are not known to have taken any actual part in the break. The total loss to the Liquor Commission was about 300 quarts of hard liquor.

Two soldiers from the Training Centre are in civil custody and were remanded until Tuesday, 15 May 45.

All troops at Training Centre were quiet. They were under C.B. and a patrol of Camp Police was kept moving around town last night.

At 1700 hrs the D.O.C. met with Mr.Beazley, Mr.McDonald, Attorney-General's Branch, the Attorney-General, Col.Duncanson and Lt.-Col.North. At this meeting the procedure to be carried out by the Civil Authorities in the event of their calling upon the Military in Aid of the Civil Power, was thoroughly checked, and copies of the necessary requisitions and instructions were handed to the Attorney-General.

At 1705 hrs a wire was despatched to N.D.H.Q. asking for a firm decision re soldiers found in possession of plunder, as to whether they should be charged under the Army Act or turned over to Civil Authorities, (Appendix "B").

At 1720 hrs the D.A.P.M. telephoned this H.Q. stating that the Provost Detachment at Dartmouth was asking for only 30 men from A-23 to assist the Provost tonight.

63

- 3 -

V-E Day Disorders, M.D. 6 - continued.

At 2040 hrs Security Patrol returned after a tour of Halifax. One fire was reported in the I.P.Store (Jewish) Gottingen Street. The fire was under control and the City was quiet.

At 2105 hrs Mr.J.B.Hayes called with reference to Provost guard being placed at Nova Scotia Light and Power plant. Capt. Harrington, G.S.O. 3 (Sec), advised Mr.Hayes to contact the Provost Duty Officer.

At 2200 hrs all civilian prisoners lodged in Halifax Armouries appeared to have been removed.

At 2245 hrs Col.Dobbie, Commander Defended Port of Sydney, called the D.O.C. by telephone re disturbances in Sydney.

At 2250 hrs Security Patrol returned to District H.Q. and reported all quiet in Halifax.

At 2300 hrs the D.O.C. spoke on the telephone to Col. Dobbie in Sydney who reported there were disturbances in New Waterford around the liquor store. The store had already been emptied last night. The culprits consisted mostly of youths and women throwing stones and bricks. There were six civilian police; approximately 40 R.C.M.P.: and approximately 20 Army Provost personnel employed. Approximately 40 Naval personnel were also expected to assist as individuals. Col. Dobbie considered that the situation would quickly clear up when the sailors arrived.

At 2350 hrs Operations Officer called Col.Dobbie to confirm that the Attorney-General had spoken to the Mayor of New Waterford.

Friday, 11 May 45

At 0110 hrs Col.Dobbie telephoned to advise that things had quietened down in New Waterford. In Sydney he had had 100 Artillery and 50 Infantry personnel standing to. These he had now ordered to Stand-down. There had been other disturbances of a similar nature at the Dominion and Sydney Mines, but they had subsided.

At 0210 hrs Major Newsome, Brigadier-Major, Defended Port of Sydney, telephoned to say that he had just returned from New Waterford.

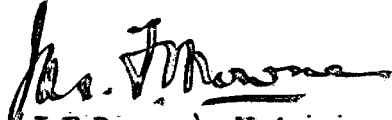
62

000240

- 4 -

V-E Day Disorders, M.D. 6 - continued.

He advised that there had never been definite cause for alarm, and that the groups were made up mostly of youngsters throwing stones.


(J.F. Browne) Major,
G.S.C. 2 (Int) M.D. 6.

SECRET

MINUTES OF A MILITARY MEETING AT HQ. M.D. 6
1120 hrs Thursday May 10th 1945

THOSE PRESENT WERE:-

Brigadier D.A. White, DSO D.O.C. M.D. 6
Colonel A.E. Duncanson, DSO VD. Col. i/c Admn
Lieut. Col. A.A. Bell, GSO 1
Lieut. Col. F.J. North, AA&QMG
Lieut. Col. Flowers, Representing Fortress
Major J.L. Willis, DAQMG
Lieut. Col. G.W. Clarke, DAPM
→ Major J.F. Browne, GSO 3 Intelligence
Lieut. Col. A. Thomson, O.C. Troops
Major J.H. Parthing, 2 i/c Troops
Captain G. Dwyer, Legal Officer
Captain V.E. Hadland, CMSC (Secretary)

Commander E.P. Shaver, RCNVR Staff Offr. Chief of Staff
(Admin) at about 1130 hrs.

Brigadier D.A. White, D.O.C. M.D. 6, pointed out several considerations which had to be settled.

It was decided that the Fortress Commander could handle any threat to magazines, gun sites and Military Properties under his Command with the Artillery personnel and Operational Infantry Units now under his Command. Lieut. Col. A. Thomson to be appointed O.C. Troops, in the event that the Attorney General should requisition Army personnel in aid of the civil power. Lieut. Col. Flowers and Lieut. Col. Thomson voiced their concurrence in this arrangement.

The O.C. Troops will receive his orders from the D.O.C. The D.O.C. will not issue such an order until he has the written requisition for Aid to Civil Power on the prescribed form from the Attorney General.

The O.C. Troops must receive signed orders from the magistrate to whom he reports. The D.O.C. warned Lieut. Col. Thomson that if this order and proclamation was not properly completed and death should result, then he, Lieut. Col. Thomson, would be criminally responsible.

The magistrate must read the "Riot Act" in public and conclude with the words "God Save The King" and wait for thirty minutes before troops can act.

Lieut. Col. F.J. North read Section 91 of the Criminal Code to the meeting.

Commander E.P. Shaver, RCNVR, Staff Officer to Chief of Staff (Adm) came into the meeting at this point.

It was pointed out to the meeting that NDHQ had only given authority for the Army to act as laid down in the pamphlet "Aid to the Civil Power" and that G.O. 316 of 1944 was not to be evoked until the former normal procedure had failed to be effective and only then on authority of NDHQ.

60

Lieut. Col. Thomson DAME, lists of his requirements in vehicles, ammunition, grenades, Vary Pistols, rations, etc. etc. Arrangements for medical supplies and Doctors to be arranged with the DMO.

A good deal of discussion arose as to whether the O.C. Troops could send out parties under the Command of an officer in sufficient strength to deal with mobs breaking out in different parts of the city. Under the authority granted by NDHQ, the Armed Forces must remain under the immediate control of the Commander at all times and in the presence of the magistrate. If broken down into detachments, each detachment Commander would have to have a magistrate present with him to authorize action.

The D.O.C. was of the opinion that certain liquor stores should be placed in protective custody by the Navy. It was felt that if liquor could not be obtained to inflame the crowd, trouble arising could be easily controlled.

Commander Shaver said that he would suggest this measure to the Admiral.

Lieut. Col. Clarke, DAPM, will arrange to have all surplus Provost personnel who are not required for certain vulnerable points, to report to Lieut. Col. Thomson as soon as the situation warrants, to act as traffic guides, etc.

At this moment, Brigadier Orde called the D.O.C. by telephone from Ottawa (time - 1254 hrs.)

The D.O.C. told the meeting that Brigadier R.J. Orde had cleared the question of Detachments. So long as a magistrate has accompanied the Officer, read the "Riot Act" and handed over the prescribed form, the Officer carried out his duty as he (the Officer) sees fit to restore order.

The D.O.C. then explained that it is not permissible to ask the Navy or Air Force for aid to the Civil Power as such Aid is only given by the Army and that the Attorney General should requisition aid from the Army in the case of riot, either real or anticipated.

Call

Srl. No.

Priority

Transmission

Instructions

ABOVE THIS LINE FOR SIGNALS USE ONLY

OFFICE DATE STAMP

FROM
(A)

Originator

Date-Time of Origin

COMMANDING SIX

101705P

HC 120-2-1 (AQ)

For Action

SECRETARY DEPT NAT'L DEFENCE OTTAWA.

TO

(W) For Information (INFO)

—Message Instructions—

—GR—

Originator's No.

A 9078 ADVICE IS REQUESTED AS TO ACTION TO BE TAKEN IN

REGARD TO SOLDIERS FOUND IN POSSESSION OF PLUNDER PRESUMED TO BE

OBTAINED FROM THE LOOTING OF STORES ETC IN HALIFAX STOP A FIRM

RECOMMENDATION AS TO WHETHER THESE PERSONNEL SHOULD BE DEALT WITH

UNDER ARMY ACT OR TURNED OVER TO THE CIVIL AUTHORITIES

0

THIS MESSAGE MAY BE SENT AS WRITTEN
BY ANY MEANS EXCEPT

WIRELESS

IF LIABLE TO BE INTERCEPTED OR TO
FALL INTO ENEMY HANDS, THIS MES-
SAGE MUST BE SENT IN CIPHERORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS
DEGREE OF PRIORITY

SIGNED

SIGNED

Time

System

Op.

THI OR TOR

Time cleared

-000244

"SOME SCENES OF VICTORY CELEBRATION LOOTING AT HALIFAX"

SOME SCENES OF VICTORY CELEBRATION LOOTING AT HALIFAX



While civilian and armed forces authorities have tried to shift the blame from their respective shoulders, the pictures above—reproduced from photographs taken on the spot—are evidence that the blame lies equally with civilians and with the armed forces. On

the right men in naval and army uniforms, as well as civilians, are seen with packages rifled from a brewery, crowding the unloading platform. The spectators appear to be taking the matter coolly. In the middle is a sidewalk scene, in which a navy man is displaying a

beer bottle and another navy man is openly carrying what appears to be a couple of pairs of civilian pants. There is a Union Jack over his shoulder. A C.W.A.C. has a package in her arms, as well as what seems to be the head of a clothing store dummy, also an article of

civilian clothing. On the right is a photo of a beer picnic in one of the city parks. There is a broached case of beer and again a display of bottles in the picnickers' hands. A merry mood seems to prevail.

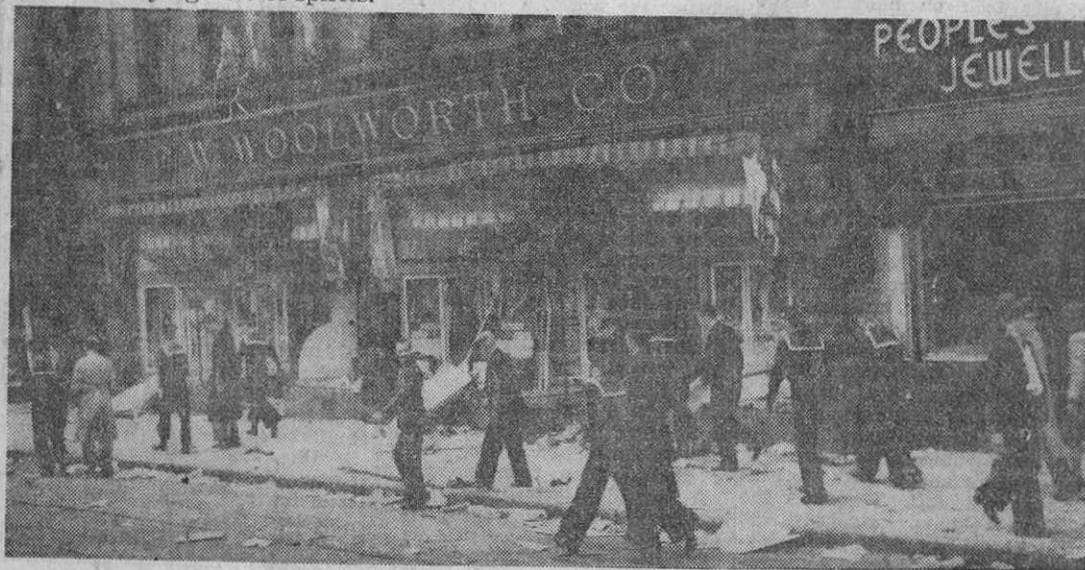
Wilfred Doucette and Roy Tildman Photos.

THE GLOBE AND MAIL, FRIDAY, MAY 11, 1945.

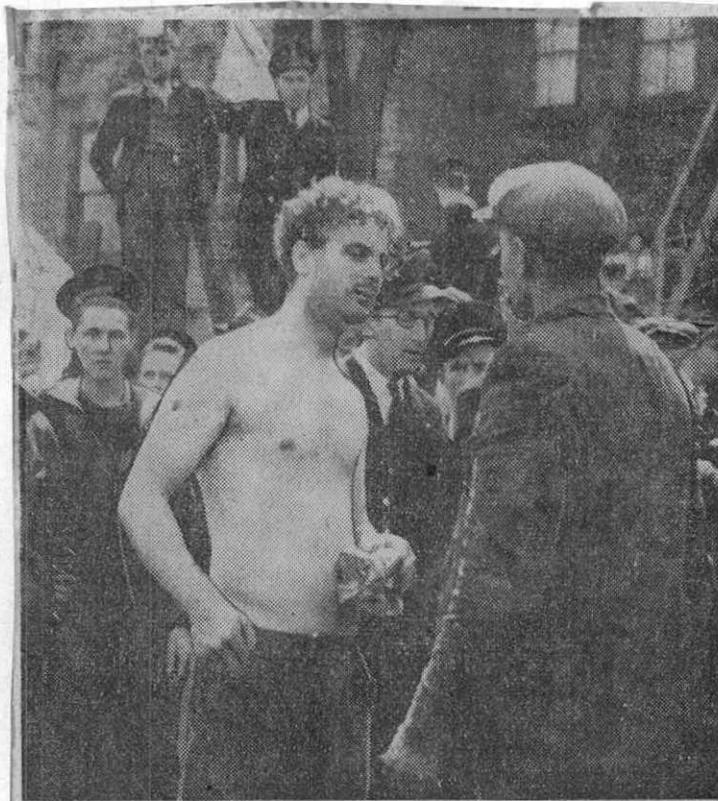
"STORES LOOTED, WRECKED, BURNED IN HALIFAX RIOTS ON VICTORY DAY"



Thousands of Halifax citizens with soldiers, sailors and airmen crowd Hollies St. in front of liquor store broken into Monday night and again on VE-Day. In foreground man is carrying case of spirits.



Wreckage litters Barrington St. At right is jewelry store swept by fire.



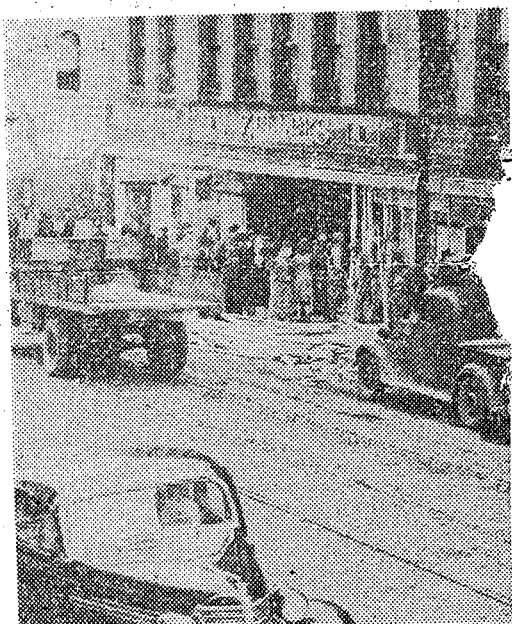
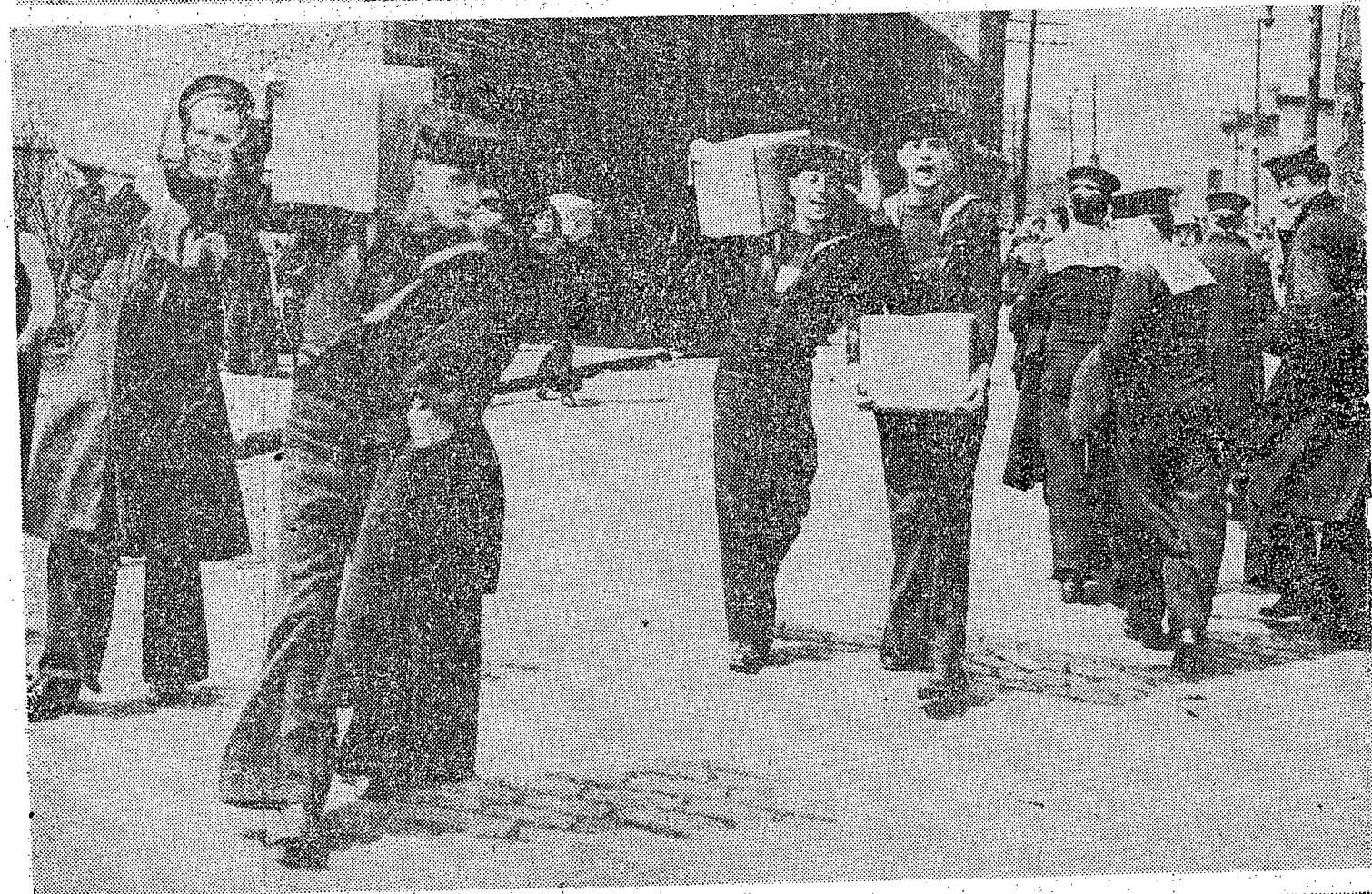
Halifax merchants lost heavily, but this chap literally lost his shirt. Surrounded by onlookers, he argues with another civilian. They later tangled in one of many street brawls.

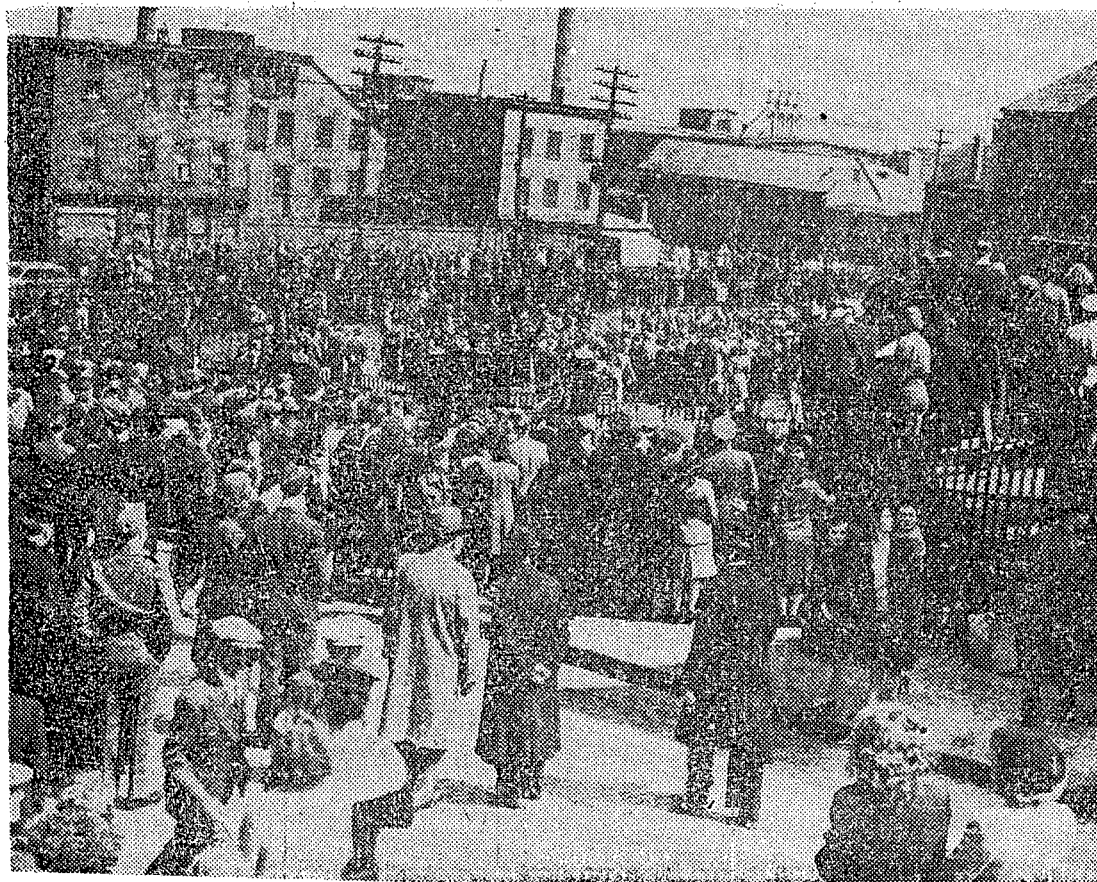
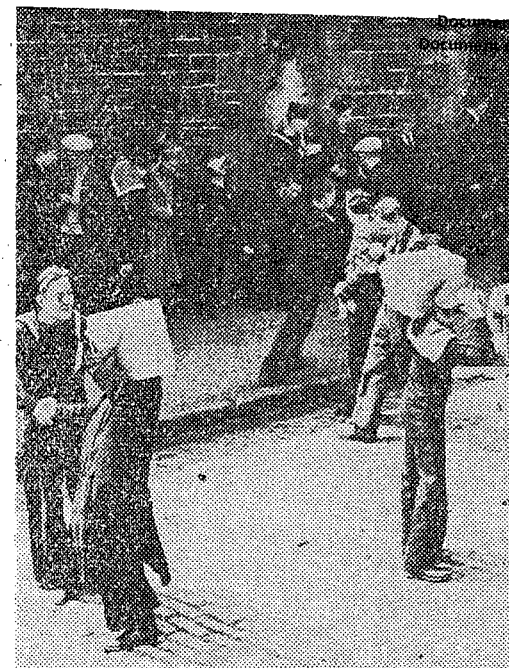
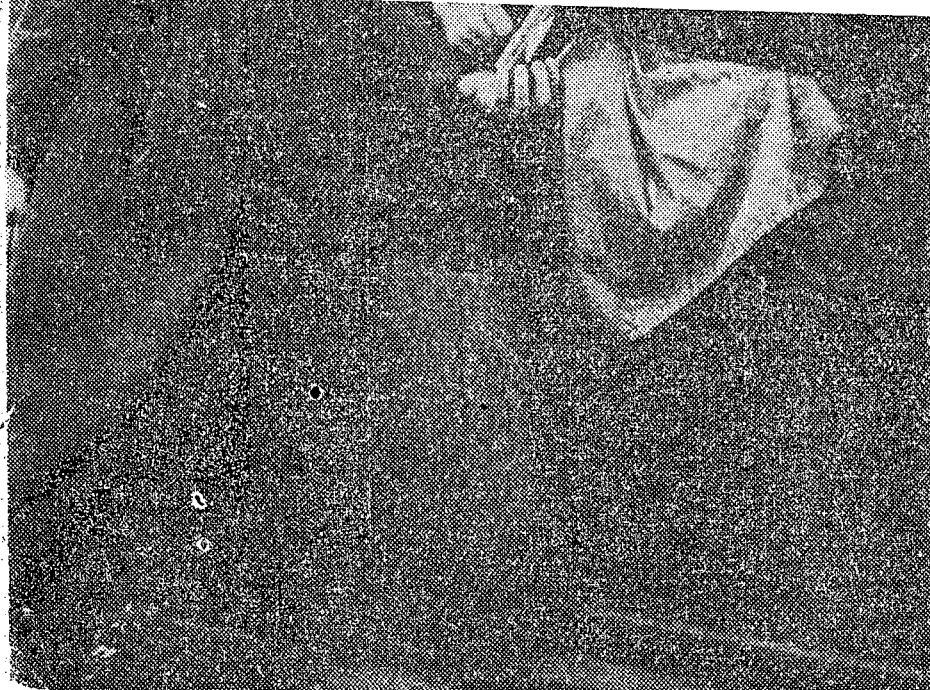


City police constable holds a small portion of loot taken to City Hall. Loss in riots has been unofficially estimated at \$5,000,000.

56

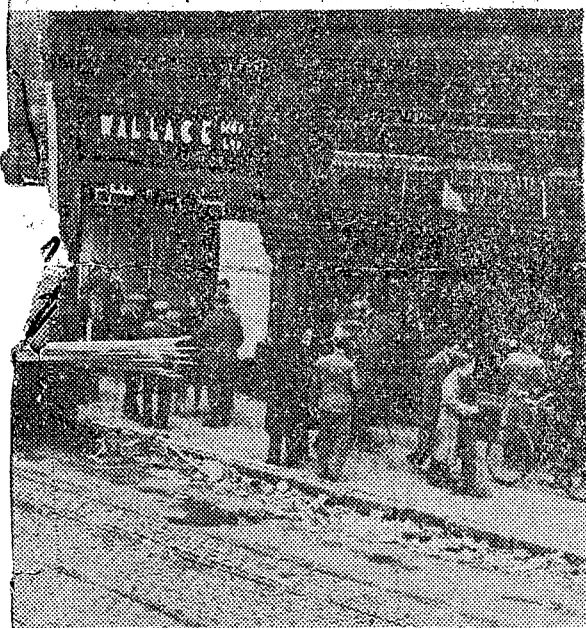
RIOT DAMAGE IS CO

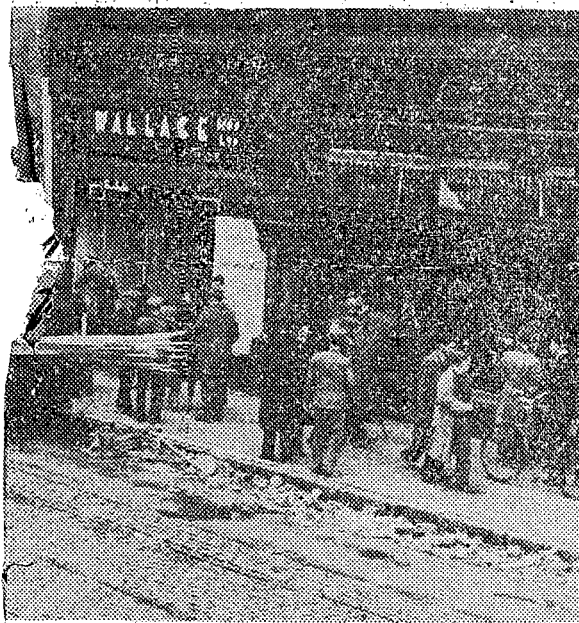




Scenes during Tuesday's v
mobs rampaged through
causing damage counted
shown in the accompanying
Pharmacy, pillaged and
incendiarists, and the ne
sailors carrying cartons o
Commission warehouse v
RIGHT, a typical mob sce
looted two Liquor Commi
in as many days. CENTRE
numerous in many sections
over a looted bottle of bee
scene as boarding up of
(top) and (bottom) a sce
mission warehouse which
CENTRE RIGHT, anothe
away from the Hollis Stre
the battle of the brewer
watch the removal of bee
BOTTOM RIGHT, a riot
headquarters by City H
Morton and aides.

OUNTED IN MILLIONS





wild disorders in Halifax, when
business sections of the city
in the millions of dollars, are
g pictures. TOP LEFT, Fader's
later damaged by fire set by
xt-door store; (underneath it)
if beer away from the Liquor
which was broken into. TOP
he on Hollis Street where gangs
ssion stores for the second time
LEFT, scenes such as this were
of the city—two sailors looking
CENTRE, a Barrington Street
damaged store fronts started
he in front of the Liquor Com-
was attacked and beer removed.
r view as stocks were carted
st liquor store. BOTTOM LEFT,
y is in full swing as hundreds
r from the downtown brewery.
victim is patched up at police
ealth Commissioner Dr. A. R.



LD Thursday, May 10, 1945

Missionary Escapes Japanese, Reaches U.S.

BRIDGEWATER, May 9—After a 56-day voyage from India by Liberty ship, Rev. Aksel Eriksen, citizen of Norway and since 1937 missionary in harrassed Hunan Province of China, is safe in a peaceful land and giving thanks to God for his escape from peril. He is the first of 12 Norwegian nationals to accept the hospitality of the United States as a "country of refuge" pending the freeing of Southern Norway and their return home. The other 11 are either in Calcutta or somewhere on the high seas.

In addition, through the helpful intervention of the Lutheran World Convention offices in New York and Chungking, some 100 Norwegian Missionary Society representatives, men, women and children, will be granted refuge in India at the various stations of the Santal Danish Mission.

Missionary Eriksen's escape from his station at Yi-Yang last June some two hours ahead of the invading Japanese troops and his flight on foot, the first 75 miles of the way to a mountain retreat maintained by the mission, is a vivid picture of conditions in the interior of China. The flight continued for several months, part of it on foot, strafed by machine guns in low flying planes, part by river boat, part by truck or broken-down bus, and finally by U. S. Army transport plane hundreds of miles into Kunming in a matter of hours.

From Kunming, Pastor Eriksen was flown to Calcutta by Chinese-American airliner, paid for with funds collected in America through the Lutheran World Action appeal. There the Norwegian consul arranged with the U. S. Merchant Marine for his passage to the United States. His "savings" during seven years in the Hunan field amounted to some \$75,000 in inflated Chinese currency, which was exchanged for \$198 American. Part of this was secured from the sale of his personal possessions at sacrifice prices.

He is due one year of furlough, after which he hopes it will be possible to return to his mission station and resume work. In the meantime, Rev. Joseph An, a Chinese whom he trained and instructed in theology, is in charge of the station and is ministering as he can to the people.

By Foresight

As Missionary Eriksen points out, it was not by chance, but by foresight that Dr. Daniel Nelson and the Lutheran World Convention office were located in Chungking ready to help when the emergency arose. Funds previously collected among the Lutherans of America during Lutheran World Action appeals last year and the year before enabled the American office of the Convention to establish the Chungking outpost last spring as a part of the program of ministering to "orphaned" foreign missions throughout the world.

In this year's appeal, which will be observed in the Nova Scotia Synod during May, out of a minimum of \$1,790,000 required and an "asking amount" of \$2,500,000, all but the first \$900,000 will be used to aid the mission stations in remote corners of the world and to rehabilitate the church life in Europe. Other

Famous Vessel Leaves Trade

GLOUCESTER, Mass., May 9—(CP)—The Gertrude L. Thebaud, fishing schooner and proud winner over the Canadian Bluenose in the 1930 fishermen's international races, is being taken out of the fishing trade and being converted into a freighter to haul bananas.

At the outbreak of war the Thebaud was taken over by the United States Government and used for a year by the Coast Guard as a patrol craft. She had previously been used on the MacMillan Arctic expedition.

Seaman Sells Rye Over Tombstone

Over the age-tilted tombstone of a Halifax founder, a seaman peddled stolen rye whisky V-E Day at \$5 a quart.

Hidden under his improvised counter in St. Paul's Cemetery was a case of the liquor stolen from one of the wrecked Commission stores a few hours before.

Sober, he was a "business man," not a drinker, and he found "takers" until his stock was gone.

causes to receive assistance include emergency welfare work, war prisoners' aid, the printing and distribution of Bibles and other literature for all parts of the world, and work among the armed forces.

In Nova Scotia, 30 congregations will participate in the appeal. The goal for the Nova Scotia Synod is \$100. While it is too early to expect complete returns, the Director of the Appeal, Rev. Paul W. H. Eydt, expressed confidence that this would be surpassed by at least 25%. All the pastors and many prominent laymen are enthusiastically backing the appeal in their respective parishes.



ESCAPES FROM JAPS—Rev. Aksel Eriksen (inset), who escaped on foot two hours before the invading Japanese armies overran his Norwegian Lutheran mission in Yi-Yang, Hunan, and a group of "inquirers" in the mountains near Yi-Yang, absorbed in the Gospel message he brings them. He was one of 150 missionaries rescued by joint action of the Lutheran World Convention and the U.S. Army Air Force.

JUST FOLKS

By EDGAR A. GUEST

FISHING INCIDENT

At dusk I saw him come ashore
With twenty pickerel or more,
But when I dared to question:
Where?"

He answered with a glassy stare.

* * * *

No single word escaped his throat.
He set to work to tie his boat.
As if he knew not I stood there
With impudence, inquiring:
Where?"

* * * *

Oh, I was but a youngster small
Who had no fishing sense, at all.
I didn't know men hate to tell
The haunts they find where big ones
dwell.

* * * *

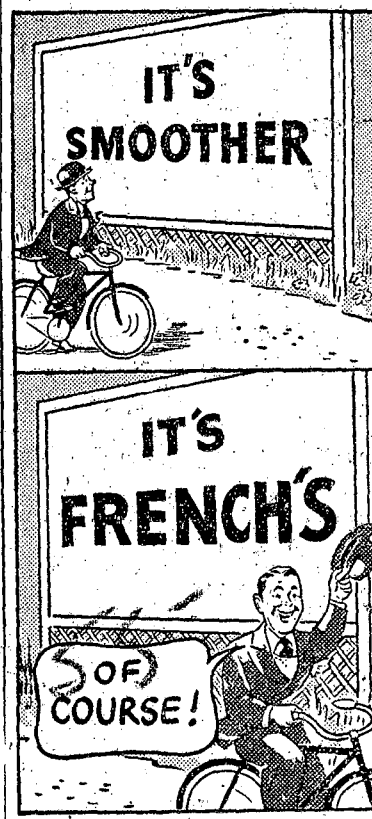
But I'm much older now than then.
I've learned the whims of fishermen
And why, when strangers ask them,
"Where?"
They answer with that glassy stare.

God's Minute

Casting all your care upon Him: for
He careth for you—1 Peter 5:7.

Our father, we know not what a day may bring forth, but our help is in Thee. We thank Thee for Thy promised watchfulness. And so we pray for a faith that will send us forth trusting ourselves to Him Who neither slumbers nor sleeps.

Keep us, we pray Thee, true to our responsibilities as followers of Thy Son, Jesus Christ. As we, day by day, succeed in making a living, may we not fail in making a life. We would learn of Him Who intermingled heaven's glory with earth's common toil. Our tasks are too often



A superfine cleanser for baths, basins, paint work and porcelain surfaces. So smooth it cannot scratch.

SNAP
Superfine
POWDER



The First Order of the Day

Follow the example of millions of men and women the world over who rely on a dash of Eno in a glass of water to start their day the pleasant way. Eno's 'Fruit Salt' has gained this enviable record simply because it helps give the zest and energy which come from inner fitness.

Eno helps sweeten the stomach, relieves excess acidity, aids digestion and helps overcome constipation—the cause of many upsetting headaches, sluggishness and that listless feeling that takes the edge off life.

Sparkling and refreshing, Eno is pleasant to take—free of harsh, bitter salts. Buy a bottle of Eno's 'Fruit Salt' from your druggist today.



... REFRESHING BEFORE BREAKFAST



BROWN-HOLDER
bakers can make
fine sodas and



SAFE • STERILE
ECONOMICAL

CASHMERE

2250-SHEE

Also makers of SNOWCAP



A superfine cleanser for baths, basins, paint work and porcelain surfaces. So smooth it cannot scratch.

SNAP
Superfine
POWDER

The First Order of the Day

Follow the example of millions of men and women the world over who rely on a dash of Eno in a glass of water to start their day the pleasant way. Eno's 'Fruit Salt' has gained this enviable record simply because it helps give the zest and energy which come from inner fitness.

Eno helps sweeten the stomach, relieves excess acidity, aids digestion and helps overcome constipation—the cause of many upsetting headaches, sluggishness and that listless feeling that takes the edge off life.

Sparkling and refreshing, Eno is pleasant to take—free of harsh, bitter salts. Buy a bottle of Eno's 'Fruit Salt' from your druggist today.

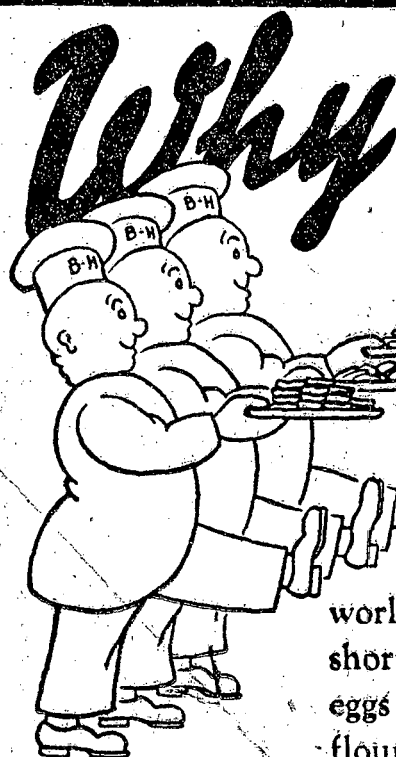


SOFT COURSE!

SAFE • STERILE
ECONOMICAL

CASH

Also makers of SNOV

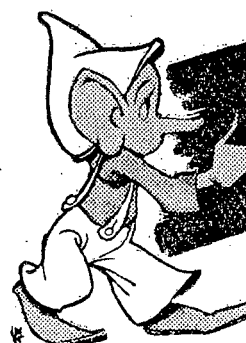


BROWN-HOLDER
bakers can make
fine sodas and
"sweets" at
regular prices!

If you had the money to buy the most modern baking equipment in the world—and to pay extra to get the best shortening, sweet, whole milk and fresh eggs—and the time to choose the finest flours...

Then, you too, could bake such fine fresh sodas, such a variety of delicious sweet biscuits and cakes to sell at regular prices...

You see Brown-Holder bakers can afford all these things because we sell so much (120 pounds of sodas are baked every five minutes!). And because Brown-Holder's Maritime Maid products are so popular we need take only a tiny, tiny profit on each and pass the savings on to you...



COLORFUL
COOL-DAINTY
DELICIOUS

Use this good old-fashioned way to make milk in to tempting rennet-custard... with "Junket" Brand Rennet Tablets and this brand new recipe. They're pretty—tasty—and so easy to make. No cooking! Easier to digest than ordinary milk, too. Economical.

Ask you000253 or

"JUNKET"

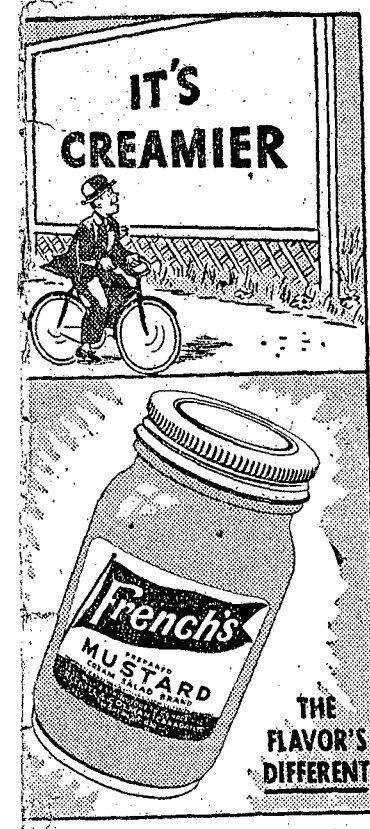
Service Act Extended in States

WASHINGTON, May 9—(AP)—President Truman today signed legislation extending the Selective Service Act as a "compelling necessity the continuance of military operations against Japan".

The President said he signed the bill extending the military draft a year from May 15 (or until the war ended on all fronts) with reluctance because he did not wish his action to be interpreted as expressing concurrence with a section of legislation placing "added restrictions on the War and Navy Departments in their management of fighting forces."

The measure, as passed by Congress, prohibits the use of 18-year-olds in combat unless they have had at least six months of training. The War and Navy Departments posed the restriction on use of 18-year-olds when the Bill was before the House and Senate.

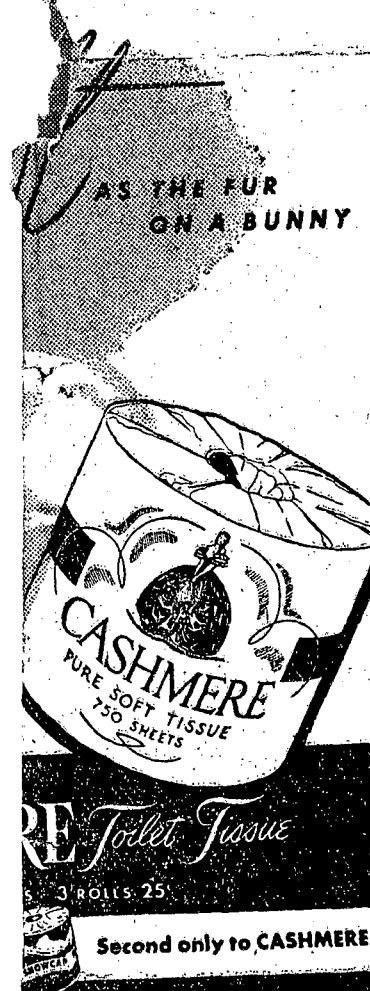
side heavy through our forgetfulness of Thee.
May we, so hunger and thirst after righteousness as to enter into the assurance of Thy protection and help, and thus when other voices enjoin us, saying, "All these things will give Thee if Thou wilt fall down and worship me," may we find our refuge in Thee, and hear Thee say, "The Lord shall preserve Thee from all evil: He shall preserve Thy soul."
May our hearts be freed from fret and care this day, and may the peace of God which passeth all understanding be ours from this time forth, and even forevermore.—Amen.
REV. M. A. ROBINSON, B.A.,
Toronto, Ont., Canada.



**IT'S
CREAMIER**

**French's
MUSTARD**

**THE
FLAVOR'S
DIFFERENT**



CASHMERE

PURE SOFT TISSUE

750 SHEETS

RE Toilet Tissue

3 ROLLS 25¢

Second only to CASHMERE



GREAT PROBLEMS — Pope Pius in an eight-minute broadcast marking the end of the European war, said that the continent now was faced "with gigantic problems and difficulties".

**HOW CAN YOU
TELL YOUR
DAUGHTER IF—**

**You, Yourself, Don't Know
These Intimate Physical Facts!**

Before your daughter marries—make sure her knowledge of intimate feminine hygiene is MODERN, up-to-date as it can be! Old fashioned mixtures of vinegar, soap or soda for the douche DO NOT and CAN NOT give the great germicidal, cleansing, action of Zonite. Overstrong solutions of poisons may actually burn and severely irritate the tissues. But with Zonite you take no such risk!

Zonite actually destroys odor. It INSTANTLY kills every germ it touches. YOU CAN BE SURE no other germicide kills germs any FASTER or MORE THOROUGHLY than Zonite, yet is SO SAFE to delicate tissues. Use Zonite often as needed without slightest risk. Follow label directions.

Free Booklet Tells Intimate Facts
Revealing booklet, "Newer Knowledge of Modern Feminine Hygiene," mailed FREE in plain wrapper. Write: Zonite, Dept. A-1 St. Thérèse, Que.

Zonite
THE NEWER FEMININE HYGIENE

Thursday, May 10, 1945

culties", and called on God to enlighten Allied leaders in bringing about a peace founded on the equality of all nations, weak and strong.

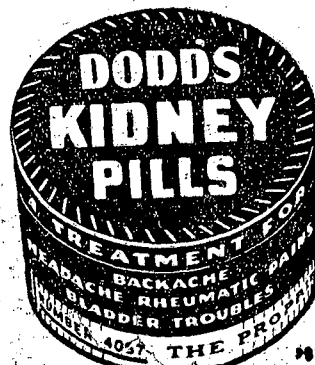
"War has aroused everywhere discord, suspicion and hatred," the Pontiff said. "If therefore the world wishes to regain peace it is necessary that falsehood and rancor should vanish and in their stead sovereign truth and charity should reign."

Safe In England

SPRINGHILL, May 9—Mrs. Murray Cottenden has received word that her husband, Pilot Officer Murray Cottenden, who has been a prisoner of war in Germany for two years, is safe in England.

THE HALIFAX HERALD 7

LUNENBURG, May 9—Mrs. J. Innes, Liverpool, was elected president of United Church Lunenburg-Queens W.M.S. held in Central United on Tuesday.



**One COAT OF
Kwickwork**
RUBBER ENAMEL
Brightens your Home

A Stroke of the brush on furniture or woodwork and you have a lovely Kwickwork Rubber Enamel Finish of unusual toughness and washability. One coat is usually sufficient to hide an old surface.

"Your Nearest Elastica Dealer"

The T. Eaton Company (Maritimes) Limited, Halifax, Nova Scotia
Forhan's Linoleum Shop, 9 Gottingen Street, Halifax, Nova Scotia
Provincial Builders Supplies Limited, 2 Atlantic Street, Halifax, Nova Scotia
Bridgewater Hardware, Bridgewater, Nova Scotia
Newcombe Electric Shop, Windsor, Nova Scotia
M. F. MacLean, Esplanade and Alexander St., Sydney, Nova Scotia
A. B. Colborne, George Street, Sydney, Nova Scotia
Norman H. Gillis, New Waterford, Nova Scotia
M. C. Nearing, New Waterford, Nova Scotia
Rossignol Sales, Limited, Liverpool, Nova Scotia

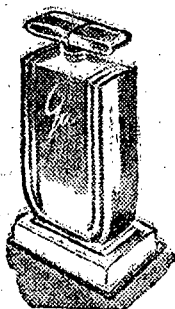
INTERNATIONAL VARNISH COMPANY, LIMITED
HALIFAX - MONTREAL - TORONTO - HAMILTON - WINNIPEG - CALGARY - EDMONTON - VANCOUVER

The Robert Simpson Eastern Limited, Halifax



Perfume of enchantment
for "TONIGHT AND EVERY NIGHT"

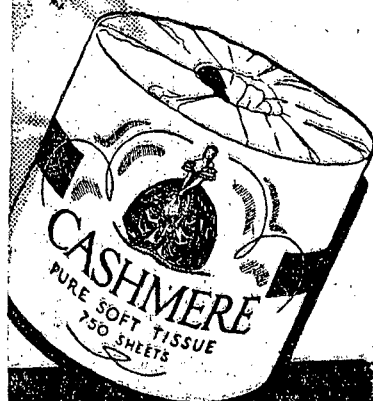
Rita Hayworth chose this fine fragrance for the new Columbia Technicolor picture "TONIGHT AND EVERY NIGHT" 3.00; 5.75



HARRIET HUBBARD

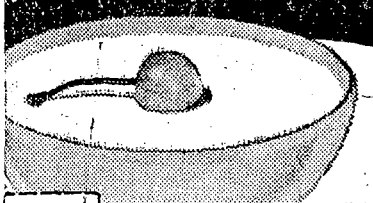


AS THE FUR
ON A BUNNY



RE Toilet Tissue
3 ROLLS 25
Second only to CASHMERE

's a milk dessert
children simply love



RECIPE

Maraschino Cherry Rennet-Custard

- 1 "Junket" Rennet Tablet
- 2 tablespoons cherry juice
- 2 cups milk (not canned)
- 3 tablespoons sugar
- 1 teaspoon almond flavoring
- 12 maraschino cherries (chopped)

Divide maraschino cherries among 4 or 5 dessert dishes. Dissolve rennet tablet in cherry juice. Add sugar and almond flavoring to milk. Warm slowly, stirring constantly. Test a drop on inside of wrist frequently. When COMFORTABLY WARM (110° F.) not hot, remove at once from heat. Add dissolved rennet tablet and stir quickly for a few seconds only. Pour at once, while still liquid, into individual dessert dishes. Let stand at room temperature until set—about 10 minutes. Chill.

RENNET TABLETS

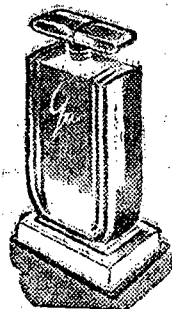
Not sweetened or flavored add sugar and flavor to taste; 12 tablets in package; each tablet makes 4 or 5 rennet-custards or more than a pint of smooth ice cream. Directions in package.

"THE 'JUNKET' FOLKS"
Chr. Hansen's Laboratory,
Toronto, Can.



You

Perfume of enchantment
for "TONIGHT AND EVERY NIGHT"



Rita Hayworth chose this fine fragrance for the new Columbia Technicolor picture "TONIGHT AND EVERY NIGHT" 3.00; 5.75

HARRIET HUBBARD
Ayer

One of many Mother's Day Gift Suggestions. For others, write or telephone Simpson's Personal Shopping Service, 4-4111.

Simpson's

Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Press Index

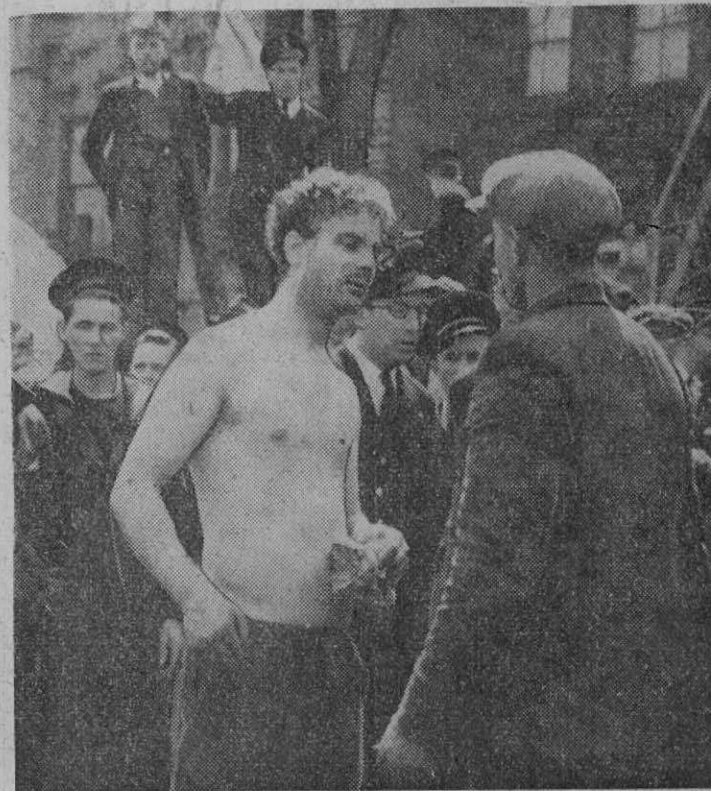
Stores Looted, Wrecked, Burned in Halifax Riots on Victory Day



Thousands of Halifax citizens with soldiers, sailors and airmen crowd Hollis St. in front of liquor store broken into Monday night and again on VE-Day. In foreground man is carrying case of spirits.



Wreckage litters Barrington St. At right is jewelry store swept by fire.



Halifax merchants lost heavily, but this chap literally lost his shirt. Surrounded by onlookers, he argues with another civilian. They later tangled in one of many street brawls.



City police constable holds a small portion of loot taken to City Hall. Loss in riots has been unofficially estimated at \$5,000,000.

H. Adm

270

20 35 hrs.

VER V AC NR 52

FROM COMMANDING SIX HALIFAX N S 11 1200P

TO DEFENSOR

GR 42 BT



A 9134 RE TELEPHONE CONVERSATION BRIGADIERS WHITE AND FERGUSON STOP
AM INFORMED BY NOVA SCOTIA LIQUOR COMMISSION THAT BEER WAS CLEARED
OUT FROM DOMINION LAST NIGHT STOP HARD LIQUOR HAD BEEN REMOVED PRE-
VIOUSLY STOP REPORTED NO SERVICE PERSONNELL INVOLVED

BT 112050P BP

11 2010P

THIS IS AN ACTION COPY		
IF INCORRECTLY DELIVERED, COMPLETE BELOW AND RETURN TO A.S.O. 615 WOODS		
BRANCH	TIME	SIGNATURE

20

MAY 11 1945



000257

M. F. M. 3100
1000-5-01 (100)
K. P. 710 H.Q. 077-30-200

CIPHER
CIPHER

ARMY MESSAGE

(OUTGOING)

FILE: HQ 54-27-63-7 Vol 2
DAG(B)

DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING
MILITARY DISTRICT NO 6
HALIFAX N S

PLACE OTTAWA ONTARIO 11 MAY 45

DATE

RANKS 8288

FOR INFM

PARA ONE VICE-ADM JONES CHIEF OF NAVAL STAFF IS PROCEEDING IMMEDIATELY TO
HALIFAX TO ASSUME COMD OF ALL NAVAL PERS IN THE AREA (.)

PARA TWO AS SENIOR SERVICE OFFR HE IS AUTHORIZED TO CALL UPON OFFRS AND PERS OF
THE ARMY AND AIR FORCE TO ASSIST HIM IN ANY WAY THAT MAY BE DEEMED
NECESSARY OR ADVISABLE (.)

PARA THREE THIS HOWEVER DOES NOT IN ANY WAY ALTER THE STATUS OF THE DOC ID 6 IN
THE EVENT OF THE ATTORNEY GENERAL OF NOVA SCOTIA DELIVERING TO HIM
THE REQUISITION IN THE PRESCRIBED FORM UNDER THE MILITIA ACT REQUESTING
AID TO THE CIVIL POWER (.)

PARA FOUR IN THAT EVENT THE DOC ID 6 WILL ACT IN ACCORDANCE WITH THE MILITIA ACT
AND KR(CAN) (.)

PARA FIVE ACK AND IF ADVICE OR INFM IS REQUIRED ON ANY POINTS COMMUNICATE THIS
HQ (.)

ADJUTANT GENERAL

GAF/MR

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MUST BE SENT IN CIPHER

IF THIS MESSAGE IS LIABLE
TO BE PUBLISHED,
INDICATE BELOW.

DEGREE OF PRIORITY

TIME OF ORIGIN

SIGNED

Major-General
Adjutant-General

Immediate

2200 hrs

THIS MESSAGE WILL BE TRANSMITTED IN CIPHER.

CONFIRMATION COPIES MUST NOT BE SENT BY MAIL.

SINGLE FORM FOR CIPHER MESSAGE

000258

M. F. M. 3169
2114-41 (112)
K. P. 750 H.Q. 1770-31-031

~~CIPHER~~
CIPHER

ARMY MESSAGE

(OUTGOING)

FILE: H. 54-27-63-7 Vol 2
DAG(3)

PLACE

DATE

DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING
MILITARY DISTRICT NO 6
HALIFAX N S

OTTAWA ONTARIO

11 MAY 45

RANKS 6289

PARA ONE REF RECENT DISTURBANCES NOVA SCOTIA (.)

PARA TWO TAKE IMMEDIATE ACTION TO SET UP A COURT OR COURTS OF INQUIRY TO
INQUIRE INTO AND REPORT UPON ALL THE CIRCUMSTANCES CONNECTED WITH ALL
RECENT DISTURBANCES INVOLVING ARMY PERSONNEL INCLUDING THE EXTENT AND
NATURE OF BREACHES OF DISCIPLINE ON THE PART OF SUCH PERSONNEL (.)

PARA THREE IT IS IMPORTANT THAT THE EVIDENCE OF WITNESSES SHALL BE TAKEN AS
QUICKLY AS POSSIBLE WHILE THEY ARE AVAILABLE AND THE FACTS ARE FRESH
IN THEIR MINDS (.) AS INCIDENTS OCCURED IN DIFFERENT PARTS OF THE
PROVINCE YOU MAY CONSIDER IT DESIRABLE TO CONVENE SEVERAL COURTS SO
THAT EVIDENCE AND REPORTS WILL BE AVAILABLE EARLIEST (.)

PARA FOUR YOU MAY CONSIDER IT DESIRABLE TO TAKE ADVANTAGE OF PROVISIONS OF LAST
SENTENCE OF ER(CAN) PARA 627 (.)

PARA FIVE REALIZE YOUR DIFFICULTIES BUT SITUATION REQUIRES MOST URGENT ACTION AND
THAT COMPLETED PROCEEDINGS WITH REPORTS AND YOUR RECOMMENDATIONS BE
FORWARDED EARLIEST AIRMAIL SPECIAL DELIVERY (.) YOUR REPORT WILL
INCLUDE ANY DISCIPLINARY ACTION ALREADY TAKEN OR PENDING (.)

ADJUTANT GENERAL

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MUST BE SENT IN CIPHER

IF THIS MESSAGE IS LIABLE
TO BE PUBLISHED,
INDICATE BELOW.

DEGREE OF PRIORITY

TIME OF ORIGIN

Major-General
Adjutant-General

Important 2215hrs

SIGNED

THIS MESSAGE WILL BE TRANSMITTED IN CIPHER.

CONFIRMATION COPIES MUST NOT BE SENT BY MAIL.

SINGLE FORM FOR CIPHER MESSAGE

000259

Confidential

The Cabinet have agreed:

- (a) That Vice-Admiral Jones, Chief of Naval Staff, proceed immediately to Halifax to assume command of all Naval personnel in the area and that, as Senior Service Officer he be authorized to call upon officers and personnel of the Army and Air Force to assist him in any way that may be deemed necessary or advisable.
- (b) That appropriate Service Inquiries be instituted forthwith by Navy, Army and Air Force to investigate the extent and nature of breaches of discipline by service personnel in the Halifax area during the recent disorders.

*Press release is going out today from
Minister of Navy*

11/5/45-

[Signature]



000261

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
- Army -

HQS 8696-1 RD 14 (DAG(B))

OTTAWA, 11 May 45

NO 163

THE MINISTER

SITUATION REPORT ON DISTURBANCES
as of 1030 hours 11 May 45

Ref Sit Rep No 162 regarding disturbances
in Nova Scotia.

2. DOC MD 6 has reported by tele that the streets in Halifax were very quiet last night. The curfew which has been in effect after 2000 hrs will be restricted to 2200 hrs effective 11 May 45 as an experiment by the civic authorities.
3. CB on Army tps has been lifted effective 11 May 45 and it was reported that the Navy intend to partially lift the CB imposed on Naval personnel effective 11 May 45.
4. No service personnel were on the streets in Halifax last night except those on duty. There was less evidence of drunkenness than on the previous night.
5. The sit at Dartmouth is satisfactory and the DOC stated that the arrival of the sixty Provost from Camp Borden had a very good effect at both Dartmouth and Halifax.
6. At New Waterford, N.S. a number of civilian youths whose average age was approx 17 yrs and some women threw stones and bricks that caused some damage to property. No tps were involved and at 0110 hrs 11 May 45 everything was quiet.
7. At Dominion and Sydney Mines there were minor disturbances and it was reported that a liquor store at Dominion had been broken into. The DOC was obtaining further infm on this. At 0110 hrs 11 May 45 all was quiet. No tps were involved.
8. A further Sit Rep will be issued when infm is received.

G. A. B.
(A.E.A.)
Major
Adjutant

DISTRIBUTION:

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General
The Minister, Naval Services
Minister of National War Services
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister
Private Secy to the Prime Minister
Clerk of the Privy Council
DM (Army)
CGS
AG
DPR (Army)
The Commissioner, R.C.M.P.
Director of Censorship

MAY 10 1945

Directorate of Public Relations
Armed

These Are Pictures of the Million Dollar "Victory" Riot in Halifax, N.S.



Tars Have Fun With a Shop Dummy



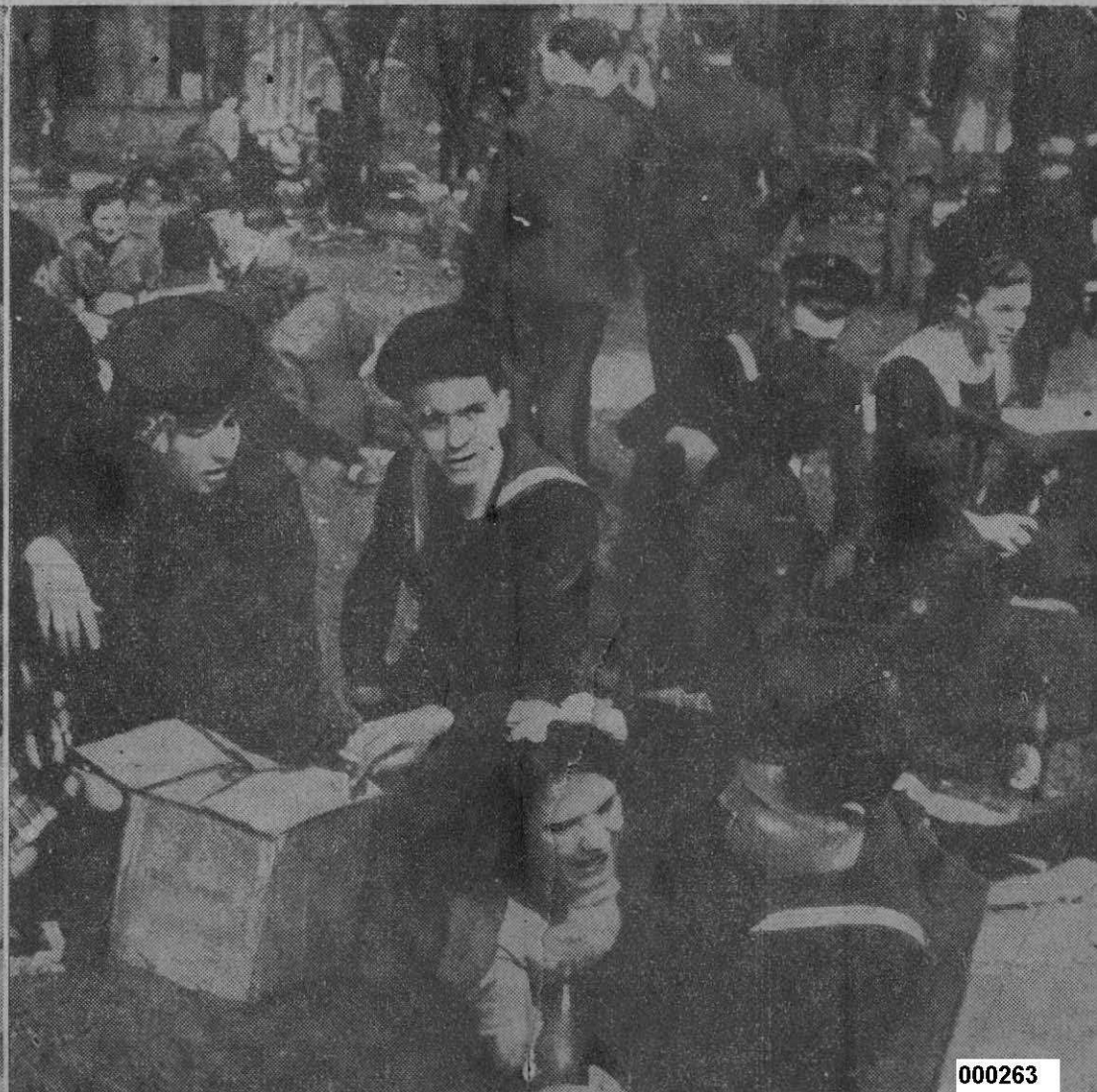
Littered Inside of Jewelry Shop



Fur Coat Was a "Prize"



Empty Beer Cartons Litter the Street



Sailors and Friends Hold Their Party in a Park

Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Press Index Section

RETURN TO
Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Room 402, La



Sailors have fun with a shop dummy in battered Halifax during V-E Day celebrations.

PRESS CLIPPING NO. 47

MAY 1 0 1945

Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces
Press Index Section

RETURN TO
Director
Armed Forces
Room 40



CELEBRATING V-E DAY IN HALIFAX—Halifax stores were looted and 1,500 plate-glass windows smashed when the V-E Day crowd, drunk and pillaging, caused an estimated \$5,000,000 worth of damage. Two sailors are dead and hospitals are overflowing with injured. Sailors and their friends hold their V-E Day party in a park.

PRESS CLIPPING NO.46....



IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE

No. H/150-1-2 (G1)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE
ARMY

AIR MAIL

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,
Halifax, N.S., 10 May

The Secretary,
Dept of National Defence,
OTTAWA, Ontario.

V-E Day:

Herewith report of the activities in the
Halifax Area during 9 May 45, as noted by the
G.S.O. II (Int).

10451
5427-63-7
MAY 11 1945
File
Chgd. to
Referred to *Adm*

②

*log. 101
to note PH
1 min*
RECEIVED
COLONEL
B. of ADMIN.
MAY 11 1945

[Signature]
(D.A. WHITE), Brigadier,
District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6.

45

V-E DAY DISORDERS IN HALIFAX

Notes by G.S.O.2 (Int).

Wednesday, 9 May 45

All was quiet in the City of Halifax and Town of Dartmouth this morning.

Troops not on duty remained in quarters and billets.

During the day the Chief of Police notified citizens that they must report any loot remaining in their possession to the City Police.

Rumours persisted during the day that Naval personnel intended to break out of Barracks and finish the job they had begun on Halifax yesterday. These rumours came to District H.Q. through civilian channels, but no official information was received regarding any actual attempt being made to do so.

At 1030 hrs the D.O.C. telephoned to the A.G.'s Branch reporting on the situation.

At 1455 hrs Halifax Fortress advised this H.Q. that the D.A.P.M. had asked for 100 additional men to guard Oland's Brewery. These were provided.

The D.O.C. spoke to Capt. Miles, Naval Chief of Staff, who stated that there were no Naval personnel in the vicinity of the Brewery.

At 1530 hrs the D.O.C. inspected a parade of the Debert Battalion on North Common. After the inspection, the parade marched round Citadel Hill and along Sackville Street, where the D.O.C. took the Salute. Numerous civilians were seen both on the Common and along the line of march. The troops were well-officered and well-disciplined, and their morale appeared to be high. From press notices it is evident that the troops made a good impression on the civilian population and the result was generally reassuring.

At 1605 hrs a report was received from Major Smith, Royal Liverpool Insurance Group, saying that soldiers were causing trouble in Dartmouth by preventing people from boarding the Ferry. A check was made, and this H.Q. was later advised that passengers were being checked in order to ensure that they had a legitimate reason for crossing on the Ferry. Major Smith was so advised.

2 Copies

V-E DAY DISORDERS IN HALIFAX - continued

At 1620 hrs word was received from General Agent, C.P.R. Telegraphs, saying that rumours were current to the effect that there would be further trouble this evening, and requesting military assistance in guarding their premises. The matter was taken up with the A.A. & Q.M.G., who advised that nothing could be done unless a request were made by the proper Civil authorities. The D.O.C. was advised of this request and C.P.R. Telegraphs were duly notified.

At 1635 hrs a telephone call was received from Mr. Beazley, Executive Assistant to the Attorney-General, to the effect that it was desired to call a meeting of the Heads of Navy, Army, Airforce and R.C.M.P., Chief of Police and Mayor of Halifax at District H.Q.

This meeting was held at 1700 hrs, when the Services were asked whether they could provide additional accommodation where the Civil Police might incarcerate civilians offenders until such time as other arrangements could be made for them. The D.O.C. agreed to make the miniature Rifle Range in the Halifax Armouries available for this purpose, provided that the Civil Police undertook to guard and supervise any civilians who might be placed there.

Accordingly, at 2000 hrs the Chief of Police requested that this accommodation be made available immediately, and this was done.

At 1715 hrs the D.O.C. telephoned to O.C. #60 C.A.(B) T.C. Yarmouth, to enquire how the situation was there. All was quiet.

At 1730 hrs Mr. Beazley, Executive Assistant to the Attorney-General, telephoned from the D.O.C.'s office to Mayor Wright of Liverpool to enquire regarding the situation there.

At 1820 hrs an additional 30 Provost Corps reinforcements arrived by air from Camp Borden. Another flight was expected to arrive 3 or 4 hours later.

At 2100 hrs Lieut. Shea, R.C.A.S.C., reported from the Halifax Armouries that there were about 68 civilians now occupying the space allotted by the Army, but only one civilian policeman was present. Lieut. Shea added several of the intoxicated persons, in his opinion, required the services of a Doctor. Col. Duncanson, Col. i/c Admin., telephoned to

- 3 -

V-E DAY DISORDERS IN HALIFAX - continued.

the Chief of Police, who agreed to send more civilian policemen and a Doctor. This was done.

By the end of the day 151 civilian persons were located in the Halifax Armouries.

At 2330 hrs the G.S.O. 2 (Int) made a Security Patrol round the Halifax area affected and reported that all appeared to be quiet, both on the streets and in the various barracks.

At 2359 hrs the R.C.M.P. reported all quiet.

At 0330 hrs the D.A.P.M. presented a similar report.

Jas. Browne
(J.F.Browne) Major,
G.S.O. 2 (Int) M.D. 6.

△ TE



77450

VER V AC NR 142

FROM COMMANDING SIX HALIFAX NS 101730P

TO SECRETARY DEPT NAT'L DEFENCE OTTAWA

GR 58 BT

A 9078 ADVICE IS REQUESTED AS TO ACTION TO BE TAKEN IN
REGARD TO SOLDIERS FOUND IN POSSESSION OF PLUNDER PRESUMED TO BE
OBTAINED FROM THE LOOTING OF STORES ETC IN HALIFAX STOP A FIRM
RECOMMENDATION AS TO WHETHER THESE PERSONNEL SHOULD BE DEALT WITH
UNDER ARMY ACT OR TURNED OVER TO THE CIVIL AUTHORITIES

BT 102007P

BE B

55777

10-2030
A

000270

1019709

ARMY MESSAGE

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

CLEAR

(OUTGOING)

FILE (DAG(B))

PLACE

DATE

DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING
MILITARY DISTRICT NO 6
HALIFAX NS

OTTAWA Ontario

11 MAY 45

RANKS 8195

PARA ONE

REF YOUR A 9078 DATED 10 MAY 45

PARA TWO

ON YOUR VERBAL RECOMMENDATION RECEIVED ON THE

TELEPHONE THE FOLLOWING ACTION IS APPROVED

(A) ARMY PERSONNEL ALREADY NOW OR HEREAFTER
ARRESTED BY CIVIL POLICE FOR BEING IN
POSSESSION OF PLUNDER WILL BE DEALT WITH
BY CIVIL POLICE

(B) OTHERS WILL BE DEALT WITH BY ARMY
AUTHORITIES

PARA THREE

SHOULD ANY PARTICULAR CIRCUMSTANCES ARISE WHICH
WOULD CAUSE THE DOC TO DESIRE TO ALTER THIS
ARRANGEMENT HE SHOULD USE HIS DISCRETION IN
PARTICULAR CASES BUT NORMALLY THE ABOVE IS THE
PROCEDURE TO BE FOLLOWED

PARA FOUR

ACKNOWLEDGE

ADJUTANT-GENERAL

CAP:VB

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS

THIS MESSAGE MAY BE SENT AS WRITTEN BY ANY MEANS

DEGREE OF PRIORITY

TIME OF ORIGIN

EXCEPT INCLUDING } WIRELESS

IMMEDIATE

1000 hrs

SIGNED Major-General
Adjutant-General

COPY 5 FOR ORIGINATOR'S FILE

000271

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

- ARMY -

HQS 8696-1 FD 14 (DAG(B))

OTTAWA, 10 May 45

NO 162

THE MINISTER

SITUATION REPORT ON DISTURBANCES
as of 1000 hours 10 May 45

Ref Sit Rep No 161 regarding disturbances in Nova Scotia.

2. LOC MD 6 has reported by tele that the streets in Halifax were quiet last night. No service personnel were on the streets except those on duty.
3. After curfew (2000 hours) the police picked up about 200 members of the civilian population in various parts of the city, who were charged with drunkenness.
4. The streets at Dartmouth, N.S. were quiet and were patrolled by the local civil police assisted by city aldermen and pickets from the three services. Curfew is in force in that town.
5. At New Waterford, N.S. on the night of 9 May 45, the liquor store was looted. Only civilians were involved.
6. At Whitney Pier, Sydney, N.S. an attempt to loot the liquor store was made by a mixed crowd of civilians and some of the services. The Civil Police, Shore Patrol and Provosts prevented the attempt from being successful.
7. At Yarmouth, N.S. there was some slight evidence of trouble and the DOC MD 6 directed tps at the Training Centre to be confined to bks.
8. Sixty members of the C Pro C arrived at Halifax by Air from Camp Borden and have been placed under the cmd of DOC MD 6. A battalion of one thousand All Ranks of the Cdn Army is held in readiness at a point nearby Halifax.
9. Although the sit is well in hand in Halifax, the DOC is aware there is still a large amount of unconsumed liquor which has been looted from Govt stores, in possession of the population and this is a potential danger.
10. A further Sit Rep will be issued when more infm is received.

E. A. Walford
(A.E. Walford)
for Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION:

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General
The Minister, Naval Services
Minister of National War Services
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister
Private Secy to the Prime Minister
Clerk of the Privy Council
(Army)

(1)
(1)
(1)
(1)
(1)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

- ARMY -

HQS 8696-1 FD 14 (DAG(B))

OTTAWA, 10 May 45

NO 162

THE MINISTER

SITUATION REPORT ON DISTURBANCES
as of 1000 hours 10 May 45

Ref Sit Rep No 161 regarding disturbances in Nova Scotia.

2. LOC MD 6 has reported by tele that the streets in Halifax were quiet last night. No service personnel were on the streets except those on duty.
3. After curfew (2000 hours) the police picked up about 200 members of the civilian population in various parts of the city, who were charged with drunkenness.
4. The streets at Dartmouth, N.S. were quiet and were patrolled by the local civil police assisted by city aldermen and pickets from the three services. Curfew is in force in that town.
5. At New Waterford, N.S. on the night of 9 May 45, the liquor store was looted. Only civilians were involved.
6. At Whitney Pier, Sydney, N.S. an attempt to loot the liquor store was made by a mixed crowd of civilians and some of the services. The Civil Police, Shore Patrol and Provosts prevented the attempt from being successful.
7. At Yarmouth, N.S. there was some slight evidence of trouble and the DOC MD 6 directed tps at the Training Centre to be confined to bks.
8. Sixty members of the C Pro C arrived at Halifax by air from Camp Borden and have been placed under the cmd of DOC MD 6. A battalion of one thousand All Ranks of the Cdn Army is held in readiness at a point nearby Halifax.
9. Although the sit is well in hand in Halifax, the DOC is aware there is still a large amount of unconsumed liquor which has been looted from Govt stores, in possession of the population and this is a potential danger.
10. A further Sit Rep will be issued when more infm is received.

A.E. Walford
(A.E. Walford)
for Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION:

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General
The Minister, Naval Services
Minister of National War Services
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister
Private Secy to the Prime Minister
Clerk of the Privy Council
DM(Army)
CGS
AG
DPR(Army)

(1)
(1)
(1)
(1)
(1)
(1)
(1)
(1)
(2)
(3)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

- ARMY -

HQS 8696-1 FD 14 (DAG(B))

OTTAWA, 9 May 45

NO 161

THE MINISTER

SITUATION REPORT ON DISTURBANCES
as of 1230 hours 9 May 45

Ref Sit Rep No 160 regarding disturbances
in Nova Scotia.

2. DOC MD 6 has reported by tele that the
sit has greatly improved and that the Attorney-General
has not requisitioned tps in aid of the civil power.

3. In addition to disturbances at Halifax
and Dartmouth he states that at 2200 hrs 8 May 45
civilians and army personnel looted a liquor store at
Kentville, N.S. but that all tps were back in bks at
2359 hrs.

4. There is a report of a small disturbance
at Sydney, N.S. which was successfully dealt with by
the Shore Patrol and the Civil Police. It involved
civilians and sailors.

5. The DOC is of opinion that looted liquor
is still in the hands of the public in Halifax and
Dartmouth and that there is a possibility of further
disturbances. All services have patrols on the streets.

6. Sixty members of GRC consisting of offrs
and ORs are being moved by air from Camp Borden to
Halifax this date to assist dets of that corps wherever
they are required in MD 6. The 1000 military personnel
ref to in para 7 of Sit Rep No 160 continue to be held
near Halifax.

7. A further Sit Rep will be issued when
more infm is available.

G. A. Ferguson
(A.E. Walford) *Brig*
Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION:

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General	(1)
The Minister, Naval Services	(1)
Minister of National War Services	(1)
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister	(1)
Private Secy to the Prime Minister	(1)
Clerk of the Privy Council	(1)
Deputy Minister (Army)	(1)
CGS	(1)
AG	(2)
DPR(Army)	(3)
The Commissioner, R.C.M.P.	(1)
Director of Censorship	(1)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

- ARMY -

HQS 8696-1 FD 14 (DAG(B))

OTTAWA, 9 May 45

NO 160

THE MINISTER

SITUATION REPORT ON DISTURBANCES
as of 0930 hrs 9 May 45

The object of this report is to outline briefly some facts in connection with disturbances at Halifax and Dartmouth, Nova Scotia, involving the civilian population, members of the three Armed Services and the Merchant Marine on the 7th and 8th days of May, 45, as reported over the telephone by the DOC MD 6 at 1825 hours 8 May 45.

2. Some time in the evening of 7 May 45 mixed crowds milling about in lower town, Halifax, broke into Sackville Street Liquor Store, took all the liquor and broke windows in the vicinity. No other looting was reported at that time.

3. At 1430 hours 8 May 45 when a VE Day parade was being held the Mayor of Halifax came to see the DOC MD 6 and stated that crowds had broken into a brewery and some other liquor stores in Halifax and that he needed assistance. A conference was immediately held which the heads of the three Services and the RCMP attended. It was decided to end the program and complete the parade as early as possible. Further reports were received that liquor stores and other places of business were being broken into and looted. The crowd was out of hand.

4. At 1630 hours 8 May 45 the Mayor called a meeting at which the Attorney-General of Nova Scotia, his legal advisers, several aldermen, the Civilian Committee for V-Day, the heads of the Armed Services, the RCMP and the Chief of Police of Halifax attended.

5. Following this meeting the Mayor issued a proclamation that all persons should withdraw from the streets and that service personnel should return to their barracks or billets. The DOC MD 6 sent all available army officers into the streets to order army personnel back to barracks or billets. He detailed available personnel to assist the Provost Corps in their duties. The Navy authorities did the same sort of thing and a senior officer went through the streets in a broadcasting truck with the Chief of Police and others directing naval personnel back to their barracks and warning them that anyone out after 2000 hours would be severely dealt with. The Mayor embodied this same message in his proclamation.

6. The plan as agreed upon by the Mayor and the heads of the Services was to clear the streets of civilians and service personnel.

7. To take care of further contingencies 1000 military personnel have been moved to a point near

Halifax.

8. The disturbance has spread to the adjoining community of Dartmouth where a liquor store has been looted, and rioting took place there as well as in Halifax.

9. Arrangements have been made to call out troops in aid of the civil power if required by the Attorney-General of the Province of Nova Scotia but so far no requisition to that effect has been made.

10. Arrangements have been made to supplement the Provost at Halifax temporarily, and the situation has improved considerably.

11. A further report will be made when more information is available.

G. Ferguson
Brig
(A. E. Walford)
for Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION:

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General	(1)
The Minister, Naval Services	(1)
Minister of National War Services	(1)
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister	(1)
Private Secy to the Prime Minister	(1)
Clerk of the Privy Council	(1)
CGS	(1)
AG	(2)
DPR (Army)	(3)
The Commissioner, R.C.M.P.	(1)
Director of Censorship	(1)

Directorate of Public Relations
Armed Forces

Scores In Halifax Jails As Aftermath Of Rioting Some Merchants Ruined

Anarchy Reigned For Six Hours in Downtown
Streets—Incendiaries Blamed For Two Serious
Fires — Service Hospitals and Barracks
Full of Injured

Halifax, May 9 (Special)—Commercial Halifax, from ocean terminals to Pier Two and beyond toward Africa Hall, from waterfront wharves to Agricola street's smaller shops lies in wreckage to-day; acres of plate glass are strewn in the streets and looted store stocks are mangled and trampled on pavements slimy with rain and debris, aftermath of a VE-Day riot that raged unchecked for hours and cost the city a sum running well over a million.

Two fire-wracked hulks of buildings in Hollis and Barrington streets are believed to be the work of incendiaries who touched off the flames at the peak of the wild disorders.

In the jails are a few score of the many thousands of drunken and hysterical men and women—service and civilian alike—youths and calculating vultures who flocked to the scene to reap what others had sowed in destruction.

In hospitals, naval, military and civilian, were an unstated number of victims. Slashings, gashings and concussions were common as the rioters fought among themselves, tossed heavy objects from upper storeys of buildings or hurled jagged arrows of glass into commercial establishments.

In barracks, aboard ships and in homes were hundreds more who were beaten or injured in the worst outbreak in the city's 186-year-old experience with war and congregations of British, Canadian and foreign military and naval forces.

SIX HOURS OF ANARCHY

Anarchy reigned for six hours after an uncontrolled mob, sweeping from Barrington and Granville streets down into Water street, captured a brewery and its thousands of gallons of stock, then turned back again into the retail section, squeezing out through the ravaged side streets into Gottingen and Agricola, missing not more than enough establishments than could be counted on the fingers.

Loss estimates are impossible at this time, business men say, but stocks of clothing, drugs, jewelry, furniture, hardware went into the scrap heap or the caches set up by the looters, amateur and professional.

The fires which wrecked Fader's Hollis st. drug store and swept through the Redden Building at Sackville and Barrington cost at least \$100,000 before they were checked by the massed apparatus.

MANY MERCHANTS RUINED

"Many merchants have been ruined by this—especially the smaller business men," it was said by a mercantile authority to-day, stocks, fixtures, cash and records, down to pots and pans in restaurants and counter slips in stores were carted away, smashed, pocketed or torn up and scattered, to lie in the streets.

Starting before 3 o'clock on a continuation of the wrecking inaugurated the night before by the burning of a police patrol car and a tram, the smashing of hundreds of panes of streetcar glass and store fronts, yesterday's rioting was only partially stopped by a more or less disregarded curfew order which closed the streets to all pedestrians and motorcars, civilians and service, at 8 o'clock.

Only a downpour of rain in the late hours of the night sent late stragglers home or back into stores where, as recently as 1.30 o'clock this morning, they were pawing over stocks in a drunken passion for the exact in size or color. Proprietors and staffs, as they and the civilian police had done earlier in the day, stood by. The former either watched, helplessly without comment, or co-operated rather than be tossed into the streets through glass-less window frames.

DISCUSS MARTIAL LAW

For four hours the mayor and members of city council discussed with the naval, military and air force commanders in this area the advisability of declaring martial law.

Weak and inexperienced forces available for provost service are given by civilian authorities as the reason why this course was not taken.

Bloodshed was feared and a curfew proclamation was the com-Rear Adm al Murray promise, getting out to the rioters by way of loud-speakers after devastation had

promptly went to sleep and stayed there until they were dragged out by other rioters. In still another window, several sat on a chesterfield until their friends overturned it and deliberately tore away the legs.

All the while a seaman sat in a red leather chair at the curb, grinning emptily and handing out bottles to those who surged past.

At the curb sat two airmen with a bottle of rum, while civilians stood passing a bottle from hand to hand until it was empty and then producing another and another. They drank steadily, like hundreds of others within eye reach. As they moved away one man collapsed completely, eyes rolled back as if dead. No one paid the slightest attention. Two did not bother to step over him. They stepped on him instead.

In Hollis and Granville streets the scenes were the same. Thousands were in the crowd that rushed the main liquor commission warehouse, handing out cases of hard liquor to those who opened them where they stood, pocketed what they could or dashed away down the side streets to established hides they expect to prove profitable.

DOWN TO \$1 CASE

VE-day liquor which had started off in the bootleg market at from \$12 to \$15 at night while the fireworks were being set off along the harbor front, slipped down until a case was offered for a dollar by a service man too drunk to need more and who was left sprawling protectively over his loot.

By five o'clock, every street was a litter of goods dropped by the helpless and the hurried. Men wandered by, vaguely swinging weapons at the remains of shattered glass or climbed nimbly and, strangely, seldom hurt, back into the stores where dozens still milled about. They emerged carrying such incongruities as coat-hangers, upholstering samples as big as a handkerchief, and pieces of dress goods not big enough for patchwork quilting.

Almost all had drunken women with them. Some garbed in fur coats and clutching armfuls of dresses.

There were Chinese and Malays, Indians and Africans in the crowd. Silent mostly, and empty-handed, and only occasionally intoxicated.

OVERSEAS MEN PLEAD

Men with patches denoting overseas service pleaded with or cursed fellow servicemen at the wreckage.

One harangued a crowd milling about the foot of St. Paul's Hill urging volunteers to stop the wrecking—he had just beaten up a civilian for it and while he talked another battle was going on behind his back, the combatants rolling over and over in the strewn glass.

Minutes after this, the first fire alarm sounded, calling the apparatus to Faders Drug Store where, according to men on the scene at the time, someone had touched a match. Dense clouds of smoke shrouded the building and it took an hour to put out the blaze. Before it was over a second and more serious outbreak had started in the Peoples' Credit Jewelers in Barrington street. From these premises it spread to D'Alairds next door and into the upper storeys where they are many offices and other business premises. This fire lasted four hours.

Break Into Brewery Patrols Are Helpless

In a renewal of rioting following Monday night's disturbances, Keith's Brewery was broken into and pillaged while naval patrolmen stood by unable to intervene. A liquor store warehouse was also looted. Practically all the glass in downtown business establishments was smashed.

An estimated 5,000 intoxicated servicemen and civilians roamed the streets. Fully 30,000 persons live in the rioting areas.

Looters laden with pillaged cigars, cigarettes, dry goods and other retail goods streamed from the downtown quarters.

Ambulances carried away those injured from flying glass, as practically every store window in the downtown area was smashed. Pillagers carried away loot in stolen suitcases. Many carried armloads of clothing snatched from stores. Women and girls took part in the pillaging.

Empty beer cases littered the streets for blocks about as the celebration neared its zenith.

When the patrol car fire burned itself out a sailor found it would still operate, so he took it on a joy ride. The ride included crashing into a waterfront office, which was wrecked. Then revellers attempted to heave the car over a wharf. It stuck half way and was left there.

Four thousand navymen were turned loose and took part in the revelry.

Elaborate fireworks displays held the attention of the crowds earlier in the night and street dances helped. After midnight the excitement turned into riots.

CAUGHT NAPPING

Scenes Of Brewery Raiding And Looting In Halifax



Sailors make off with cases of beer after breaking into a Halifax brewery.



LOOTERS CLEAN OUT HALIFAX CLOTHING STORE

—(Photos telephoned to The Telegram)

Assure Good Supply Of Civilian Clothing

Ottawa, May 9—Measures designed to assure an adequate supply of civilian clothing in Canada were announced to-day by the Wartime Prices and Trade Board.

The board said the production directives system is being extended to insure that available fabrics are directed to the manufacture of an adequate supply of essential civilian garments.

Also beguiled by the early peacefulness, Chief of Police J. J. Conrad Monday afternoon had declared, "It's beautiful. No trouble at all."

Then he said the liquor stores were secure. One man was posted inside and one outside at each store, the chief said confidently.

Only once were the rioters balked. That was when they went to storm the last remaining liquor store. There they met a phalanx of naval



REAR ADMIRAL MURRAY

concessions were common as the rioters fought among themselves, tossed heavy objects from upper storeys of buildings or hurled jagged arrows of glass into commercial establishments.

In barracks, aboard ships and in homes were hundreds more who were beaten or injured in the worst outbreak in the city's 186-year-old experience with war and congregations of British, Canadian and foreign military and naval forces.

SIX HOURS OF ANARCHY

Anarchy reigned for six hours after an uncontrolled mob, sweeping from Barrington and Granville streets down into Water street, captured a brewery and its thousands of gallons of stock, then turned back again into the retail section, squeezing out through the ravaged side streets into Gottingen and Agricola, missing not more than enough establishments than could be counted on the fingers.

Loss estimates are impossible at this time, business men say, but stocks of clothing, drugs, jewelry, furniture, hardware went into the scrap heap or the caches set up by the looters, amateur and professional.

The fires which wrecked Fader's Hollis st. drug store and swept through the Redden Building at Sackville and Barrington cost at least \$100,000 before they were checked by the massed apparatus.

MANY MERCHANTS RUINED

"Many merchants have been ruined by this—especially the smaller business men," it was said by a mercantile authority to-day, stocks, fixtures, cash and records, down to pots and pans in restaurants and counter slips in stores were carted away, smashed, pocketed or torn up and scattered, to lie in the streets.

Starting before 3 o'clock on a continuation of the wrecking inaugurated the night before by the burning of a police patrol car and a tram, the smashing of hundreds of panes of streetcar glass and store fronts, yesterday's rioting was only partially stopped by a more or less disregarded curfew order which closed the streets to all pedestrians and motorcars, civilians and service, at 8 o'clock.

Only a downpour of rain in the late hours of the night sent late stragglers home or back into stores where, as recently as 1.30 o'clock this morning, they were pawing over stocks in a drunken passion for the exact in size or color. Proprietors and staffs, as they and the civilian police had done earlier in the day, stood by. The former either watched, helplessly without comment, or co-operated rather than be tossed into the streets through glass-less window frames.

DISCUSS MARTIAL LAW

For four hours the mayor and members of city council discussed with the naval, military and air force commanders in this area the advisability of declaring martial law.

Weak and inexperienced forces available for provost service are given by civilian authorities as the reason why this course was not taken.

Bloodshed was feared and a curfew proclamation was the com-Rear Admiral Murray promise, getting out to the rioters by way of loud-speakers after devastation had been wrought.

Along with the announcement made by Rear Admiral Murray and Mayor A. M. Butler, travelling the streets in a sound car giving orders and making appeals, came word that reinforcements for the military police were being rushed into the city from outside points.

They arrived and carted away truckloads of fighting or helpless service drunks to barracks. Civilians, men, women and children, some mere bystanders and others still bent on looting, clung to the sidewalks or skulked in passageways and alleys, pouncing on what they could get.

They were the remnants of the mob which, about two o'clock in the afternoon, powered by liquor from stores looted the night before, packed Barrington and Granville streets from wall to wall, hilariously smashing windows. An attempt, which promised to be successful at first, was made to turn the crowd which numbered three to four thousand people, toward the garrison grounds where bands were assembled and entertainment of a sort was said to be in the offing.

Mob Is Switched

Toward Waterfront

Then, suddenly, there was a switch in direction, ascribed by some to three drunken civilians, and the mass of men and women, with children hanging on and destined to be hurt later, swung toward the waterfront and Keiths brewery. Provost guards were there ahead of the throng and beat them back from the yard. Three sailors stepped through a smashed furniture store window and stepped into a bed. They

off the booting market at \$12 to \$15 at night while the fireworks were being set off along the harbor front, slipped down until a case was offered for a dollar by a service man too drunk to need more and who was left sprawling protectively over his loot.

By five o'clock, every street was a litter of goods dropped by the helpless and the hurried. Men wandered by, vaguely swinging weapons at the remains of shattered glass or climbed nimbly and, strangely, seldom hurt, back into the stores where dozens still milled about. They emerged carrying such incongruities as coat-hangers, upholstering samples as big as a handkerchief, and pieces of dress goods not big enough for patchwork quilting.

Almost all had drunken women with them. Some garbed in fur coats and clutching armsful of dresses.

There were Chinese and Malays, Indians and Africans in the crowd. Silent mostly, and empty-handed, and only occasionally intoxicated.

OVERSEAS MEN PLEAD

Men with patches denoting overseas service pleaded with or cursed fellow servicemen at the wreckage.

One harangued a crowd milling about the foot of St. Paul's Hill urging volunteers to stop the wrecking—he had just beaten up a civilian for it and while he talked another battle was going on behind his back, the combatants rolling over and over in the strewn glass.

Minutes after this, the first fire alarm sounded, calling the apparatus to Faders Drug Store where, according to men on the scene at the time, someone had touched a match. Dense clouds of smoke shrouded the building and it took an hour to put out the blaze. Before it was over a second and more serious outbreak had started in the Peoples' Credit Jewelers in Barrington street. From these premises it spread to D'Alairds next door and into the upper storeys where they are many offices and other business premises. This fire lasted four hours.

Break Into Brewery

Patrols Are Helpless

In a renewal of rioting following Monday night's disturbances, Keith's Brewery was broken into and pillaged while naval patrolmen stood by unable to intervene. A liquor store warehouse was also looted. Practically all the glass in downtown business establishments was smashed.

An estimated 5,000 intoxicated servicemen and civilians roamed the streets. Fully 30,000 persons live in the rioting areas.

Looters laden with pillaged cigars, cigarettes, dry goods and other retail goods streamed from the downtown quarters.

Ambulances carried away those injured from flying glass, as practically every store window in the downtown area was smashed. Pillagers carried away loot in stolen suitcases. Many carried armloads of clothing snatched from stores. Women and girls took part in the pillaging.

Empty beer cases littered the streets for blocks about as the celebration neared its zenith.

When the patrol car fire burned itself out a sailor found it would still operate, so he took it on a joy ride. The ride included crashing into a waterfront office, which was wrecked. Then revellers attempted to heave the car over a wharf. It stuck half way and was left there.

Four thousand navymen were turned loose and took part in the revelry.

Elaborate fireworks displays held the attention of the crowds earlier in the night and street dances helped. After midnight the excitement turned into riots.

CAUGHT NAPPING

The peace blitz came as a shock to Major Osborne Crowell, civilian defense director, who was in charge of the civic celebration. Earlier he said he did not expect any trouble.

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act / Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information



LOOTERS CLEAN OUT HALIFAX CLOTHING STORE

—(Photos telephoned to The Telegram)

Assure Good Supply Of Civilian Clothing

Ottawa, May 9—Measures designed to assure an adequate supply of civilian clothing in Canada were announced to-day by the Wartime Prices and Trade Board.

The board said the production directives system is being extended to insure that available fabrics are directed to the manufacture of an adequate supply of essential civilian garments.

Also beguiled by the early peacefulness, Chief of Police J. J. Conrad Monday afternoon had declared, "It's beautiful. No trouble at all."

Then he said the liquor stores were secure. One man was posted inside and one outside at each store, the chief said confidently.

Only once were the rioters balked. That was when they went to storm the last remaining liquor store. There they met a phalanx of naval shore patrolmen and withdrew.

W. A. Russell, Halifax restaurateur, had long fought for protection against such riots but had been pooh poohed by the authorities.



Rear Admiral Murray



CANADA

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE ARMY

Headquarters, M.D. 6,
Halifax, N.S., 9 May

194 5

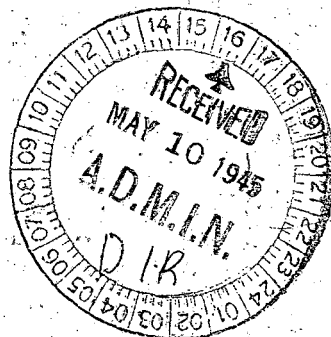
Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information
No. H.150-1-2 (G1)

The Secretary,
Department of National Defence,
Ottawa, Ont.

V-E Day

CENTRAL REGISTRY Army	
SUBJECTS	
54-27-63-7	
MAY 10 1945	
File	
Chgd to	St. John 9/10
Referred to	Radon

Enclosed is a copy of a brief report regarding
the disorders in Halifax during 7-8 May, 1945, with Appen-
dices "A", "B", "C" and "D".



D. A. White
(D. A. WHITE) Brigadier,
District Officer Commanding,
Military District No. 6

REPORT OF EVENTS CONNECTED WITH DISTURBANCES
IN HALIFAX ON 7-8 MAY AS KNOWN TO THIS HQ

7 May 45:

After radio announcement that Germany had surrendered, crowds filled the streets and carried on with joyful but harmless celebration. All liquor stores, movies and nearly all restaurants closed their doors.

Attached as Appendix "A" is a clipping from Halifax Herald, 8 May edition, giving a generally accurate account of the activities on the evening of 7 May. Naval personnel formed a very large proportion of the servicemen creating the damage. Army Provost were not called until after the liquor store had been broken into.

8 May 45:

The City was very quiet during the morning. A large civic Thanksgiving Service was held on the garrison football grounds, next to HQ, MD 6 at 1000 hrs.

A Thanksgiving Service for the combined services, represented by 500 each from Navy, Army and RCAF was scheduled to be held on the same site at 1430 hrs under Command of Vice-Admiral L.M. Murray, CB, CBE.

About 1400 hrs, DAPM reported to A&Q that he had received a call to assist in breaking up a mob of sailors gathered in front of the Nova Scotia Light & Power Co. By 1405 all available Provost were despatched in vehicles to the scene.

At 1425 hrs when the senior officers were mounting the platform for the service, the Chief of Police and Mayor arrived to request additional assistance. The mob was estimated to number between 4000 and 5000 sailors and civilians with a sprinkling of soldiers and airmen. As the Service was to be of only 20 minutes, it was begun at 1440 and terminated about 1457.

At about 1450 hrs, Lt-Col S.C. Oland, proprietor of Oland's Brewery appeared at the platform to say that the mob was clearing out his brewery.

In view of the holiday, no additional organized bodies of service personnel were available to deal with the situation. The Heads of the three Services then marched the parade downtown in the hope of breaking up the crowd. This act had little effect because by this time, liquor and beer was being carried around by the bottle and by the case.

The Halifax City Police had only about 40 available for duty and were helpless as were the service provost.

At the request of the Mayor, a meeting of the Heads of the Services, RCMP, the Mayor and city officials and the Attorney-General of Nova Scotia, was called for 1630 hrs at HQ, MD 6. The minutes of this meeting are attached as Appx "B".

At 1600 hrs, in anticipation of the need, Col i/c Admin, HQ, MD 6, ordered O.C., 1st Trg Bde Gp to have ready 1000 men in battle order organized as a Bn of 6 Coys with one Officer for each 20 men.

At request of Attorney-General and with approval of Rear-Admiral Murray, DOC issued instructions for the 1000 men to proceed from Debert to No. 6 District Depot. This force arrived at No. 6 District Depot at 2230 hrs under Command of Lt-Col Thomson, O.C., 1 Trg Bn.

The force consisted of 72 Officers and 1264 ORs including drivers of 115 vehicles.

At about 1810, the Mayor announced over the radio that the V-E Day celebrations were completed and ordered all civilians off the streets by 2000 hours. The Admiral also announced from a sound truck that all Service personnel would return to their quarters by 2000 hrs. The DOC ordered all units to send their Officers out on the streets to warn all soldiers to return to barracks at once.

At about 1815 hrs, a number of units were instructed to despatch at once all fit personnel to the Provost barracks to reinforce Provost detachments.

In the early evening, detachments of units were sent to reinforcement Provost at CWAC Barracks.

During the evening there were numerous reports from Dartmouth of trouble there. A.23 called in all men on leave and detailed 50 men to assist there. It was reported that the liquor store had been cleaned out in the afternoon. At 2200 hrs. ~~reported~~ 1000 sailors and 500 civilians were reporting to be looting the stores of Dartmouth.

During the evening, the Attorney-General communicated with Deputy Minister of Justice to have matters arranged in the event of it becoming necessary for him to sign a requisition for Aid to the Civil Power under PC 4934, 27 June 1944.

Shortly after midnight, Attorney-General, DOC and A&Q drove through principal streets that had been wrecked. A heavy rain was falling and streets were clear of persons except occasional individuals or pairs. Remaining stragglers were being picked up.

The damage is tremendous; whole blocks have all windows smashed on both sides of the street and many stores completely looted, including liquor stores, warehouses and one brewery. Attached as Appendix "C" are notes made by GSO II Intelligence made during the trouble.

Attached as Appendix "D" are radio announcements and proclamation by the Mayor.

9 May 45:

KENTVILLE:

Report received from O.C., A-14 CITC, Aldershot, that about 2200 hrs 8 May 45, civilians in majority, with some soldiers, broke windows in Kentville liquor store and commenced looting. Officers and NCOs from A-14 turned out and stopped trouble at 2359 hrs. Damage estimated by liquor store manager at about \$200.00.

SYDNEY:

From Sydney, N.S., came report of civilians and sailors breaking windows at liquor store but report indicates Shore Patrol and civil police handled situation.

V-E Day

Service of Thanksgiving

AND

Dedication

**On the Cessation of Hostilities on the
European Front**

1945

ARMED FORCES -- HALIFAX, N. S.

REAR ADMIRAL L. W. MURRAY, C.B., C.B.E., R.C.N.
Commander-in-Chief Canadian North West Atlantic

AIR VICE-MARSHAL A. L. MORFEE, C.B.E.
Air Officer Commanding-in-Chief Eastern Air Command

BRIGADIER D. A. WHITE, D.S.O.
District Officer Commanding, Military District No. 6

Order of Service

O CANADA!

O CANADA! our home and native land!
True patriot-love in all thy sons command.
With glowing hearts we see thee rise,
The True North strong and free,
And stand on guard, O Canada,
We stand on guard for thee.

O Canada! where pines and maples grow,
Great prairies spread and lordly rivers flow,
How dear to us thy broad domain,
From East to Western Sea
Thou land of hope for all who toil!
Thou True North, strong and free.

O Canada, glorious and free,
We stand on guard, we stand on guard
for thee.

O Canada, glorious and free.

O Canada, we stand on guard for thee.

Ruler Supreme, who hearest humble prayer,
Hold our Dominion in Thy loving care;
Help us to find, O God, in Thee
A lasting, rich reward,
As, waiting for the Better Day,
We ever stand on guard.

O Canada, glorious and free. Amen.

ADDRESS: By the Commander-in-Chief
Canadian North West Atlantic.

HYMN: "O God Our Help In Ages Past"

1. O God, our help in ages past,
Our hope for years to come,
Our shelter from the stormy blast,
And our eternal home!
2. Beneath the shadow of Thy throne
Thy saints have dwelt secure;
Sufficient is Thy arm alone,
And our defence is sure.
3. Before the hills in order stood,
Or earth received her frame,
From everlasting Thou art God,
To endless years the same.
4. A thousand ages in Thy sight
Are like an evening gone;
Short as the watch that ends the night
Before the rising sun.
5. Time, like an ever-rolling stream,
Bears all its sons away;
They fly, forgotten, as a dream
Dies at the opening day.
6. O God our help in ages past,
Our hope for years to come,
Be Thou our guard while troubles last,
And our eternal home! Amen.

LESSON: Psalm 46 D.O.C. M.D. 6

HYMN: "All People That On Earth"

1. All people that on earth do dwell,
Sing to the Lord with cheerful voice;
Him gladly serve, His praise forth tell,
Come ye before Him, and rejoice.
2. The Lord, ye know, is God indeed;
Without our aid He did us make;
We are His folk, He doth us feed,
And for His sheep He doth us take.
3. O enter then His gates with praise,
Approach with joy His courts unto;
Praise, laud, and bless His Name always,
For it is seemly so to do.
4. For why, the Lord our God is good;
His mercy is for ever sure;
His truth at all times firmly stood,
And shall from age to age endure.
5. To Father, Son, and Holy Ghost,
The God whom heaven and earth adore,
From men and from the angel-host
Be praise and glory evermore. Amen.

PRAYERS

ONE MINUTE OF SILENCE

GOD SAVE THE KING

BLESSING

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

Mob Run Wild On Streets Of Fowntown Halifax

Halifax's police patrol wagon went up in flames and two tram cars were wrecked late last night when service personnel who had been quietly observing Victory Day throughout the day swung into combined action.

•Collecting on Barrington Street in front of the Y.M.C.A. building, the servicemen, thousands strong, upset the patrol wagon and shortly afterwards set it on fire. Within minutes the gasoline tank had caught and the truck was enveloped in flames.

A few minutes earlier a fire had been set in a tram car. Police sent in vain hopes of quelling the disturbance roared up in the wagon to the accompaniment of a chorus of boos and catcalls from the throng.

Servicemen who had been attempting to upset the tram, still blazing, turned on the police car with shouts of glee. For brief seconds it rocked back and forth on its springs, gaining momentum steadily, then toppled over on one side with a crash.

Fire engines sped to the scene but their efforts to quench the flaming truck were put to naught when sections of hose were cut and uncoupled as fast as they were laid. Shore patrol trucks jammed with the naval police were sent to the scene but were practically powerless against the thousands arrayed against them.

Flames in the tram car burned themselves out and at midnight it was still on the rails, a shambles. Seats and windows were smashed and only the frame left intact. An-

other tram in front of the Capitol Theatre suffered the same fate.

Moving down Barrington Street to the Sackville Street liquor store, the mob smashed the plate glass windows in the store, rushed in oblivious of the jagged glass edges and came out with many bottles of liquor.

As city police stood helplessly by, servicemen climbed in in swarms. Leaping over the counter, the men seized liquor from the shelves as others stood on the sill of the window urging those outside to follow into the store.

Amid cheers of onlookers, the mob members brandished the bottles in hilarious joy, some carrying three and four quarts in their arms.

Until 10 o'clock last night the celebrations were quiet and orderly. Suddenly the spark came and from then on anything went—the maddest night perhaps old Halifax has ever seen.

Hundreds of windows in tram cars were smashed, but for the most part business establishments on Barrington Street escaped with minor damage.

Early in the disturbance, when the tram car was fired, streams of water were turned on the crowd. This method of halting the near-riot was effective while it lasted, but in a matter of minutes the hose line had been slashed or uncoupled.

Witnesses said a soldier was the first man over the top into the liquor store. At one point a human bridge was formed into the interior through the shattered window, with soldiers, sailors and some civilians clambering inside to emerge with arms full of liquor.

With the store cleared of its stock, the mob moved south through the business district.

Victory -

App. A

- B

000284

to "accept this burden and have undertaken." the atmosphere of hatred which the world will give place to a tions without which the world

er-in-Chief in Norway, broad- manding his troops to lay down

rd telling the people of Austria signed terms of unconditional

additional details temporarily; Europe was over officially, that the Germans were "kaput"—

posed officially four hours after d be "treated" as "Victory-in-

uncement

Churchill, feeling strongly Day", would make only a brief

e floor of the House of Com- rallied Britain from the dark efiance of heavy odds.

major address Thursday, and ions of security—will review to victory.

ew that another cruel and rought to its knees.

Touches

ory Commission comprising d States, France and Russia, put the finishing touches on

professed to know the exact Germany and upon a people a to attempt world domination

them:

on of the Nazi Party and separation of Germany and Allied armies on a sectional outlaws subject to death, sur- d of press, radio and motion war industry, supervision of ntrol for an indefinite period

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act
Document divulgué en vertu de la loi sur l'accès à l'information

this force (the Allied armies) has accomplished its mission with a finality achieved by no other expedition in history."

Mr. Churchill, however, got the jump on his country with a personal victory luncheon at 10 Downing Street at noon today, the Press Association reported. Members of his war cabinet and the chiefs of staff were the guests.

Mid-Afternoon

The news hit London in mid-afternoon and the crowds swelled by the thousands. Buckingham Palace was a focal point for the celebrators. Englishmen and uniformed men and women of many United Nations as well as most of the Empire milled around for hours.

Planes roared overhead. The Grenadier Guards marched by the Palace in resplendent formation.

Flags flew from homes and business establishments and Londoners wore little flags of red, white and blue rosettes in their coat lapels.

But throughout the afternoon, many millions of solemn workers stayed on their jobs and some did not actually hear the news until nearly nightfall.

Evening brought a new lift to the festival. Pubs were jammed. Victory champagne was brought up from the deep cellars and long-hoarded whisky and gin came out of hiding. Beer flowed by the barrelsful.

Police, good humoredly went through the crowds along Parliament Street, explaining there would be no proclamation by Mr. Churchill tonight. Similarly the news that tomorrow and Wednesday would be great holidays trickled to the throngs in Piccadilly, Trafalgar and Leicester Squares.

App 13

MINUTES OF MEETING

DOC's Office, 1630 hours, 8th May 45.

I. At the request of His Worship, the Mayor of Halifax, a meeting was held in the office of the D.O.C., M.D.6 at 1630 hours, 8th May 45. Those present were :

Rear Admiral Murray
Brigadier D.A.White
Mr. McQuarrie, Attorney General
Mr. Crowell
Mayor Allen Butler
Mr. Carl Bethune
Mr. Walker
Deputy Mayor J.E.Ahern
Alderman Battison
Alderman Burgess
Chief of Police Conrad
Mr. A.S.Mahon, Liquor Commission
Air Vice Marshall Morfee
G.S.O.1
A.A.& Q.M.G. Commissioner Eames, R.C.M.
D.A.A.G.
D.A.P.M.
Navy, Army, & Air Force
Colonel i/c Adm.

2. The Mayor reported the situation in the City to be serious. Crowds had been rioting for several hours and had entered the Brewery on Water Street and now breaking into the Light & Power Building at the moment, had damaged plate-glass windows all over the down town area and were endeavouring to break into the Brewery at the North End. The Mayor requested that all Services be ordered into barracks. He estimated the crowds to be of about 5000 and reported them to be drunk and out of hand.

3. Admiral Murray stated that he was loathe to order all Services out of the City as the great bulk were behaving them-selves but that he would prefer to endeavour to round up the rioters.

4. Chief of Police stated that he had not sufficient forces to act effectively.

5. Mr. Mahn reported that there were several liquor depots that were in danger and asked for protection on Agricola Street and Buckingham Street stores and the Cold Storage Plant.

6. The Chief of Police reported that he had only thirty to forty men on duty. The Admiral said that if protection was given to the liquor stores, such protection should be under the control of the Civil Police. The Mayor stated that he was loathe to take any action that would result in putting the City under Martial Law. The number of Police and Provost available was estimated as follows:

Civil	40	
Naval	180	
Army	150	
Air Force	45	Total - 315

7. It was also reported that no civil defence personnel were available. It was agreed that phase one would consist of guarding vital points, phase two of trying to disperse the rioters.

- 2 -

8. During the meeting several calls were received to state that further damage had been done to places such as Eatons, Northern Electric Building and liquor stores on Agricola Street and Buckingham Street had been broken into and robbed.

9. It was agreed that the Mayor was to declare a curfew to commence at 2000 hours and that the Mayor was to broadcast an appeal to all citizens to return to their homes by that time and remain there.

10. The Admiral agreed to broadcast an order from a public address truck (RCAP), ordering all sailors, soldiers and airmen to return to their barracks or billets by 8 p.m.

11. It was also agreed by all services to do their utmost to reinforce the Provost.

12. The D.O.C., at the request of the Attorney General, issued orders to move a force of 1000 soldiers from Debert to No.6 District Depot to be used should they be required. This action met the approval of the Rear Admiral Murray and Air Vice Marshall Morfee.

13. The meeting adjourned at 1800 hours, 8th May
45.

A.E. Duncan
(A.E.DUNCANSON) Colonel,
Officer i/c Administration
Military District No.6

AED/BMH

V-E DAY DISORDERS, HALIFAX

Notes by G.S.O.2 (Int)

MONDAY, 7 MAY 45

It was announced about noon that tomorrow, Tuesday 8 May would probably be kept as V-E Day, Germany having surrendered unconditionally.

During the evening it was reported that the Sackville Street Liquor Store had been broken into and looted by service men, mostly sailors and merchantmen and civilians. The provost Corps were not called until after the liquor store had been broken into.

Later it was reported that a Police Patrol Car had been set on fire by the mob and two street-cars overturned and wrecked, and an attempt made to set one on fire.

TUESDAY, 8 May 45

The city was quiet during the morning. A Civic Service was held at the Garrison Grounds at 1000 hours.

At 1400 hours while the parade for the combined services on Garrison Grounds was assembling, a message was received by Lt.-Col. North, A.A. & Q.M.G., from the D.A.P.M. to the effect that the Nova Scotia Light and Power Coy. had stated that their premises were being attacked.

At 1410 hours the Provost personnel were taken from the Garrison Grounds, the City Police having notified the D.A.P.M. that they needed help to control the crowds.

At 1430 hours the ceremony was conducted on the Garrison Grounds, all available Provost being in the downtown area to assist the City Police.

Later rioting became worse, and it was reported that other liquor stores were being attacked and that the windows of stores and business premises were being smashed and stocks looted.

At 1440 hours Lt.-Col. Oland appeared personally to state that his Brewery had been broken into and that liquor was being removed by the crowd.

Admiral Murray, Air Vice-Marshal Morfee and Brigadier White met to discuss what action should be taken. (Minutes of meeting attached).

During this meeting it was suggested by military Staff Officers that all available military officers in town should be despatched around the City to order all troops back to Barracks.

26

- 2 -

V-E Day Disorders, Halifax. - continued

A curfew was imposed and the RCAF sound truck, as well as radio stations were used to advise all citizens to return to their homes by 8 P.M. (Copy of Mayor's Proclamation and radio announcements attached). The radio announcement was issued at 1735 hours and the Proclamation at 1835 hours.

At 1745 hours, at the request of the Attorney-General and with the approval of Rear-Admiral Murray and Air Vice-Marshal Morphee, the D.O.C. issued instructions to have an armed force of 1,000 men move from Debert to No.6 D.D. This force left Debert at 1945 hours and by 2210 hours the advance party had reached the D.D. The main body arrived at 2240 hours under command of Lt.-Col. Thomson.

At 1800 hours all available officers and men of the 21st A.A. Regt, No.6 D.D. and No.6 District Signals Coy were lined up and despatched under officer control to the Provost Barracks to assist the D.A.P.M. By this time the troops in Halifax were returning to their barracks and quarters.

At 2116 hours the D.A.P.M. reported to the A.A. & Q.M.G. that only about 50 soldiers and small parties were left around the City of Halifax, all en route for barracks or billets. Approximately 1,000 Naval personnel and 3,000 civilians, however, were still on the streets. The fire which had broken out in Credit Jewellers was now reported to be nearly under control. A report from the Camp Hill Hospital was received at District Headquarters that sailors were trying to wreck the ambulance, and that the Provost Corps personnel had been despatched to attend to the matter.

At 2130 hours the O.C. No.6 D.D. telephoned to say that his men were coming in well in response to orders and were giving little trouble.

At 2145 hours Capt. Miles, Naval Chief-of-Staff, telephoned to the D.O.C. regarding the situation in Dartmouth. He was advised that Army personnel were being cleared off the streets and were leaving only a few Provost over there. Capt. Miles also advised that the Navy was not doing anything at the moment.

At 2150 hours Capt. Miles again called, asking for help in Dartmouth.

At 2205 hours a patrol returned to District H.Q. and reported that the crowd was still smashing windows and looting, and was moving along Barrington St. towards the Station.

- 3 -

V-E Day Disorders, Halifax - continued.

At 2245 hours Message 0781 was despatched to Ottawa. (Attached as Appendix).

At 2300 hours it was reported that the streets were clear. A few civilians were abroad but no troops.

At 2359 hours "stand-down" at District H.Q.

GENERAL

During the afternoon numerous service personnel and civilians carrying loot in the form of liquor, clothing and jewellery were rounded up and brought into District H.Q. Persons were identified and an inventory made of the articles and loot carried, after which they were ordered to return to their quarters. No further action appeared possible at the time.

J. F. Browne
(J.F. Browne) Major,
G.S.O. 2 (Int) M.D. 6.

App D

Memorandum.

The following for all radio stations Halifax 1735 hours May 8th 1945.

" The Mayor of Halifax has declared V.E. day over as from 1800 hours to night and respectfully requests that all citizens remain in or near their homes after that hour this is necessary in order that the authorities may take the necessary steps to correct the situation. The Senior Naval Military and Air Force Officers concur in this action and Naval Military and Air Force Personnel as w ordered to barracks or billets immediately.

A PROCLAMATION FROM THE MAYOR OF HALIFAX 1845 hours

the City

As the mayor of Halifax, I deem the emergency existing in the city to be sufficiently grave as to instruct all persons to retire to their homes, barracks or billets, immediately. Any persons found out of their homes, barracks, or billets after 8:00 o'clock tonight lay themselves open to serious consequences of the law.

GOD SAVE THE KING

M. Butler, Mayor

Call

Srl. No.

Priority

Transmission Instructions

ABOVE THIS LINE FOR SIGNALS USE ONLY

OFFICE DATE STAMP

FROM
(A)

Originator

COMMANDING SIX

Date-Time of Origin

082250 P

For Action

DEFENSOR

TO

(W) For Information (INFO)

INCIDENT & DESPATCH

Date

Time

— Message Instructions

Initials

Originator's No.

0 781 REFERENCE TELEPHONE CONVERSATION DOC 6 TO MAJ GEN WALFORD
 STOP DEBERT BN STRENGTH 50 OFFERS 1050 ORS 115 VEHICLES ARRIVED
 6 DISTRICT DEPOT AS FOLLOWS STOP ADVANCE PARTY 082205 P HOURS
 MAIN BODY 082230 P HOURS STOP LT COL THOMSON IN COMMAND

THIS MESSAGE MAY BE SENT AS WRITTEN
BY ANY MEANS { EXCEPT

WIRELESS

IF LIABLE TO BE INTERCEPTED OR TO
 FALL INTO ENEMY HANDS THIS MES-
 SAGE MUST BE SENT IN CIPHER

ORIGINATOR'S INSTRUCTIONS
 DEGREE OF PRIORITY

Time

System

Op.

THI OR TOR

Time cleared

000292

SIGNED

SIGNED

Halifax Damage Now Believed \$5,000,000; Dispute Over Blame

Mayor Charges RCN Responsible for Riots And Admiral Says Civilians Led Assault. Two Deaths Occur. Troops Standing Ready

HALIFAX, May 9.—(CP)—Rear Admiral L. W. Murray, officer commanding, Canadian Northwest Atlantic, in a statement tonight charged that "civilians led the assault and encouraged service personnel to take part" in the V-E Day rioting and looting here that left the business sections of the city a shambles, and caused damage estimated unofficially as high as \$5,000,000. Two navy men, a rating and an officer, died during the rioting.

Earlier tonight, Mayor Alan Butler laid the blame for the disaster at the door of the Royal Canadian Navy, claiming the trouble arose because 8,000 sailors were given leave Monday and Tuesday and allowed at large in the streets of Halifax.

Troops Stand Ready

The streets of Halifax were quiet tonight, with only civilian and service patrols and a few people on necessary business patrolling past the boarded-in windows of the business section, which has been turned into a ghost town.

Troops are standing ready near Halifax to move in if there is any further trouble. They were ordered in by Brig. A. A. White, DSO, district officer commanding Military District No. 6. So far there has been no occasion to use them, but they gave a display of power today as they marched in review before the district officer commanding on the flanks of the Citadel and the Halifax Commons dressed in full battle kit.

Tough and ready for anything, the troops are commanded by officers who have seen active service on the battlefields of Italy and the Western front.

Several thousand naval personnel who led the rioting and looting are confined to barracks at HMCS Peregrine and the dockyard. There were reports they attempted to break out today, but navy officials would not confirm this.

Ferry service between Dartmouth and this city was suspended at six o'clock tonight, and street car service also has been suspended.

Admiral's Statement

"I am satisfied that, though service personnel were present during the whole of the afternoon, in almost all cases particularly at the looting of the liquor stores, at the entering of Keith's brewery and the orgy of the window-breaking along Barrington street, civilians led the assault and encouraged service personnel to take part," Admiral Murray said. "I am also satisfied that the participation of service personnel, though no doubt reprehensible, was dictated more by drunkenness and excitement than by any desire for loot, and that the major portion of such looting as did take place was perpetrated by the civil population."

Serious Offence

Until further orders, service personnel are being confined to their barracks or ships, and "drunkenness of any kind" is being treated as a "serious offence."

Mayor Butler revealed he had called on the Dominion government to make "adequate compensation" for the damage suffered in the rioting Monday night and Tuesday, and asked that an official inquiry be held to place the blame.

No Comment

(In Ottawa, Acting Prime Minister Ilsley said he had no comment to make on Mayor Butler's address. He said he had received a telegram from the mayor, and had replied, pointing out that E. L. Cousins, wartime administrator of Canadian Atlantic ports, had been instructed to make an immediate sweeping investigation of the disorders and report as soon as possible.)

Two Dead

The navy tonight announced that two naval personnel are dead and 17 injured as a result of the victory demonstrations.

Lt. Cmdr. John George Smith, RCNR, of Ralston, Paisley, Scotland, was found dead on Dalhousie University's campus Wednesday morning. He died from a fractured skull and accompanying abrasions, plus a severe leg wound.

Stoker Verner, V78033, RCNVR, of Vancouver, was picked up Monday evening after he had collapsed on a downtown street. Medical authorities reported there was "no obvious cause of death." A coroner's report is pending.

Admiral George C. Jones, chief of the Canadian naval staff, said that the fullest and most sweeping investigation of any part the Royal Canadian Navy played in yesterday's riots will be made. Admiral Jones has returned to Ottawa and will "direct the fullest personal attention to this situation."

Feared Bloodshed

Heads of the services are said by aldermen to have resisted the suggestion that martial law be proclaimed in Halifax last night. They feared that bloodshed would follow the use of armed force to subdue the surging masses of civilians and servicemen.

Authorities took count of some of the night's casualties at Victoria General hospital today. The number confined to hospital totalled nine while approximately another dozen had been treated and sent home.

In the jails are a few of the many thousands of drunken men and women, service and civilian alike who looted in the wake of destruction wrought by the surging mobs.

Meanwhile in Ottawa it was announced that an immediate investigation of the riots had been ordered by the federal government. E. L. Cousins, wartime administrator of Canadian Atlantic ports has been instructed to "investigate all phases of the situation and has arrived in Halifax to report to the government at the earliest possible moment."

There have yet been no charges preferred against two sailors arrested last night concerning fires which gutted People's Credit Jewellers and Fader's drug store.

Mayor's Address

HALIFAX, May 9.—(CP)—Mayor Alan Butler in a radio address tonight placed the blame for the devastating victory riots here at the door of the Royal Canadian Navy, and revealed he had advised the Dominion government that the citizens of Halifax expected the government to make "adequate compensation for the damage."

In Solemn Protest

"I speak the solemn protest of the citizens against the Royal Canadian Navy. It will be long before the people of Halifax forget that great crime," the mayor said.

He outlined the steps leading up to the disastrous looting and riot that destroyed most of the city's main business sections and caused property damage that may run as high as \$5,000,000.

"The services were not in a position to control their own personnel, contrary to assurances which city officers received prior to V-E day," he added.

The mayor said he "commended the men of the army and air force who in the main have behaved in a manner befitting persons who wear the King's uniform," but blamed the navy for releasing some 8,000 sailors on leave in Halifax Monday and Tuesday.

(The rioting mobs that looted liquor stores and beer stocks, then turned and destroyed business properties was composed of members of all three armed services, merchant seamen and civilians. Sailors were preponderant in the mobs raiding the liquor and beer outlets. Hundreds of civilians joined in and ran riot in the smashed stores, looting them of thousands of dollars worth of goods and leaving the interiors completely wrecked.)

Wires Finance Minister

Mayor Butler said he had wired Finance Minister J. L. Ilsley, acting Prime Minister, following a meeting this morning with businessmen, members of the city council and the Attorney General's Department.

The telegram follows:

"In view of the circumstances surrounding the shocking events which occurred in this city Monday night and Tuesday, as mayor of Halifax I wish to advise you that the citizens of Halifax look to the government of Canada to make adequate compensation to the persons who have suffered. An official inquiry will place the blame, but there is not sufficient knowledge in the possession of the citizens as to the persons who are responsible for the damage and for allowing it to pass out of control. An immediate conference is advisable. Please advise when it can be held."

Several Circumstances

The mayor said that several circumstances made it difficult to control the situation that arose first Monday night, then developed into a full-fledged riot yesterday afternoon.

1. Every attempt had been made

to avoid bloodshed, and this has been done successfully, although such action could not halt the rioting.

2. Civilian police—hopelessly outnumbered—could not use force on the servicemen because it "was to be expected they would be mobbed by the servicemen and more violent scenes would have resulted."

3. The services were "not in a position to control their own personnel, contrary to assurances which city officials received prior to V-E day. Moreover, many of those assigned by the services to keep order deserted their duty and went over to the rioters."

4. A clash between armed military troops and sailors "was to be avoided at all costs."

"The implications of these riots are grave. In the city of Halifax comes first the right of responsible government. To the city of Halifax has come the challenge to determine whether any agent of government can revolt against the government."

At Liverpool, Yarmouth

LIVERPOOL, NS, May 9.—(CP)

The liquor store here was broken into and looted last night by a mob of sailors and civilians celebrated V-E Day, but no other breaks or damage were reported in the town. The liquor store at Yarmouth, about 120 miles down the Nova Scotia southwest coast, also was looted, by a mob said made up mostly of soldiers.

Battered and Pillaged

HALIFAX, May 9.—(Special)—Peace reigns again today in battered and pillaged Halifax, only now beginning to realize the tremendous proportions of yesterday's grim demonstration of terror.

Late rough unofficial estimates

place the loss around the \$5,000,000-mark, but this is only a guess and no proper toll yet can be tabulated.

Sight-seeing Halifax crowds milled through the downtown district this morning and afternoon past stores without fronts, and they couldn't believe their eyes. They looked aghast and angry. They shook their frowned faces.

"Sickening" they muttered. "Awful" "Terrible."

Tonight they must be off the streets by eight o'clock. The curfew imposed last night remains in effect till further notice.

Stores Closed.

Almost every store of any size is closed till further notice.

People peered through the door frames of what once had been a shoe store. Its interior was a mass of broken glass, boxes and shoes. A girl helper sat unperturbed in the corner reading a special riot edition.

One optician's store carried this one-word sign on its boarded front: "Why?"

That's the question most of Halifax and the nation asks. The general feeling is it all resulted from the deep ire of sailors particularly over the closing of all liquor stores, restaurants and theaters. The liquor retailers had been locked up since Friday.

It is still difficult to visualize yesterday's scenes. The newspapers, thinking the same way, filled their special editions with dozens of photographs, as well as stories and bitter editorials, which demand the fixing of responsibility for the riots in a sweeping investigation already promised by Vice-Admiral George C. Jones, chief of naval staff.

People today searched the piles of glass in the gutters for souvenirs and possible discarded valuables. Just 24 hours earlier a group of servicemen with dozens of bottles of beer and liquor were setting up shop on a tombstone in St. Paul's cemetery in the center of the city, where they did a roaring business.

Extra army personnel were brought to Halifax last night to be used as aid to a civil power if such was requested.

Fined In Halifax Following Riots

HALIFAX, May 9.—(CP)—Fines ranging from \$5 to \$100 were levied on eight persons today for their part in the V-E Day riots, as a record docket of 84 cases were heard by Magistrate R. E. Inglis.

In Dartmouth across the harbor, which also suffered destruction in the peace riots, two men were each sentenced to two years in Dorchester penitentiary and three others were given terms of six months each.

Allan Robinson, a naval rating, was convicted of breaking and entering a Dartmouth store and was sentenced to two years, while Morris Jennings of Port Wallis, NS, a civilian, was convicted of possessing stolen jewelry.

The fines levied in Halifax ranged from vagrancy to assault and disorderly conduct. Information was not complete on the majority of cases and they were adjourned.

Renewed Rioting In NS Districts Nipped By Curfew

SYDNEY, NS, May 9.—(CP)—Rioting flared tonight in the Whitney Pier district near here and in the mining town of New Waterford 12 miles away, but recurrence of last night's demonstrations and looting in this city of 30,000 was nipped by 9 p.m. curfew imposed tonight by Mayor D. J. MacLéan.

At Whitney Pier a crowd, mainly civilians, broke windows in the liquor store and nearby places but they were soon dispersed by police squads.

At New Waterford, civilians smashed glass in the liquor store and nearby buildings. About 25 started the fracas, but they were joined by about 300 others who looted the liquor stock. Extra police were rushed in to help quell the outbreak. Royal Canadian Mounted Police appeared with revolvers in holsters, but they were badly outnumbered.

Crowds of hundreds gathered on the main street here tonight, but civilian and service police dispersed them within an hour after the curfew was proclaimed, and late tonight all was quiet.

Last night rioting and looting raged here, with mobs of civilians and servicemen raiding the liquor store and smashing windows in about 30 stores on the main street. The curfew is effective until further notice.

Halifax's Orgy

Pent-up emotions exploded violently in Halifax on the night of V-E Day and resulted in scenes of deplorable character. Riotous drunkenness, shameless looting and alleged incendiarism marked the climax of two nights of "victory celebrations" and when the damage was counted up it came to millions of dollars.

There can be no excuse for such conduct. Mob hysteria, fanned by the free flow of stolen intoxicants, is an ugly thing and it cannot be condoned, even when the mob believes it has grievances. Those grievances, it is suggested, arise from resentment long harbored by service men against the city. The chief complaint seems to be high rents in an overcrowded community where 120,000 people had to live in accommodation for only 70,000.

But it is clear that in addition to some people who sought to express resentment, there were thousands of others simply on the loose and looking for what is euphemistically called "fun." Among their first objectives were government liquor stores and a brewery and these appear to have been ransacked by crowds on mischief bent and which were comprised of civilians as well as servicemen. Women as well as men "reeled" drunkenly through the streets in an orgy without equal.

Many of those who joined in the riotous goings-on are no doubt already soberly ashamed of their conduct now that their feelings have been exhausted. The riots were an exhibition of lawlessness which marred Halifax's fine war record. The police and military authorities seem to have been powerless to prevent the excesses, although it does look as though the steps taken in anticipation of a second night of disorders were inadequate. But an investigation will be held and responsibility, where possible, placed.

(INCOMING)

PLACE FROM

HALIFAX, N.S.

DATE & TIME

082250/MAY 45

~~RECEIVED BY THE OFFICE OF THE CHIEF OF DEFENSE~~

MAJOR-GENERAL A.E. WALFORD, A.G.--(ACTION)

C.G.S.

M.S.

I ①

② II
to D.A.G.(B)
for your
information, pls
Sincerely
A.E. WALFORD
Major-General
Adjutant General

0 781

** IMMEDIATE **

MAY 9 1945

TO DEFENSOR

REFERENCE TELEPHONE CONVERSATION DOC 6 TO MAJ GEN

WALFORD.

DEBERT BIN STRENGTH 50 OFFRS 1,050 ORS 115 VEHICLES

ARRIVED 6 DISTRICT DEPOT AS FOLLOWS.

ADVANCE PARTY 082205 P HRS

MAIN BODY 082230 P HRS.

LT COL THOMSON IN COMMAND

A-446

③

COMDG SIX

545

31498/HMD/082245Q/MAY 45

Noted
L. Pym
BRIGADIER
D.A.G. (B)

MAY 9 1945

RECEIVED
MAY 9 1945
D.A.G.(B)

NOTE: THIS MESSAGE HAS BEEN DISPATCHED IN CIPHER AND MUST NOT BE PUBLISHED OR DISTRIBUTED OUTSIDE GOVERNMENT DEPARTMENTS, OR HEADQUARTERS, OR RETRANSMITTED WITHOUT BEING PARAPHRASED.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

- Army -

HQS 8696-1 FD 14 (DAG(B))

OTTAWA, 9 May 45

THE MINISTER

SITUATION REPORT ON DISTURBANCES
as of 1230 hours 9 May 45

NO 161

Ref Sit Rep No 160 regarding disturbances
in Nova Scotia.

2. DOC MD 6 has reported by tele that the
sit has greatly improved and that the Attorney-General
has not requisitioned tps in aid of the civil power.

3. In addition to disturbances at Halifax
and Dartmouth he states that at 2200 hrs 8 May 45
civilians and army personnel looted a liquor store at
Kentville, N.S. but that all tps were back in bks at
2359 hrs.

4. There is a report of a small disturbance
at Sydney, N.S. which was successfully dealt with by
the Shore Patrol and the Civil Police. It involved
civilians and sailors.

5. The DOC is of opinion that looted liquor
is still in the hands of the public in Halifax and
Dartmouth and that there is a possibility of further
disturbances. All services have patrols on the streets.

6. Sixty members of CBrG consisting of offrs
and ORs are being moved by air from Camp Borden to
Halifax this date to assist detts of that corps wherever
they are required in MD 6. The 1000 military personnel
ref to in para 7 of Sit Rep No 160 continue to be held
near Halifax.

7. A further Sit Rep will be issued when
more infm is available.

A.E. Walford
(A.E. Walford)
Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION:

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General	(1)
The Minister, Naval Services	(1)
Minister of National War Services	(1)
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister	(1)
Private Secy to the Prime Minister	(1)
Clerk of the Privy Council	(1)
Deputy Minister (Army)	(1)
CGS	(1)
AG	(2)
DPR(Army)	(3)
The Commissioner, R.C.M.P.	(1)
Director of Censorship	(1)

OTAWA CITIZEN

9 May 48

OTTAWA JOURNAL

Riots Spread To Sydney And Kentville

SYDNEY, NS., May 8.—(CP)—A mob of sailors and civilians raided the George street branch of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission, and late tonight were causing hundreds of dollars damage by smashing plate glass windows along Charlotte street, the city's main street.

City police, RCMP, members of the navy shore patrol and Provost Corps were at the scene, but were powerless to stop the outbreak. They appeared to be attempting to keep the mob within one block, where windows were already broken, until the rioting petered out.

Fire on Main Street.

The trouble started soon after a fire was lit on the Main street and a group of youthful civilians appeared hauling a delivery wagon.

While this was in progress word spread that the liquor store was being raided and the crowd surged there. All windows in the liquor store were smashed and the place emptied of most of its stock of liquor.

The mob then moved back to Charlotte street to the fire scene and when they attempted to set fire to the wagon again a service fire truck turned hoses on them. Sailors rushed the house and in the scuffle windows were broken in a drygoods store.

There was no sign of any large-scale looting and no reports of any serious injuries.

Dispersed by Troops

KENTVILLE, NS., May 8.—(CP)—A mob of 1,000 soldiers and civilians tonight raided the liquor store here, smashing out most of the windows and carting out large quantities of liquor before they were dispersed by troops called in hurriedly from nearby Aldershot Camp. The looting came late at night, after early evening V-E Day celebrations of mild nature.

The crowd was calmed down by Maj. Irvine Bickerton, a veteran of the First Great War, who kept them in good humor until the troops arrived.

Rioting Spreads To Other Centres

KENTVILLE, N.S., May 8.—(CP)—A mob of 1,000 soldiers and civilians tonight raided the liquor store here, smashing out most of the windows and carting out large quantities of liquor before they were dispersed by troops called in hurriedly from nearby Aldershot Camp.

The looting came late at night, after early evening V-E Day celebrations of mild nature.

The crowd was calmed down by Major Irvine Bickerton, a veteran of the First Great War, who kept them in good humor until the troops arrived.

Raid Liquor Store.

SYDNEY, N.S., May 8.—(CP)—A mob of sailors and civilians raided the George street branch of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission, and late tonight were causing hundreds of dollars damage by smashing plate glass windows along Charlotte street, the city's main street.

City police, R.C.M.P., members of the Navy shore patrol and Provost Corps were at the scene but were powerless to stop the outbreak. They appeared to be attempting to keep the mob within one block, where windows were already broken, until the rioting petered out.

The trouble started soon after a fire was lit on the main street and a group of youthful civilians appeared hauling a delivery wagon.

While this was in progress word spread that the liquor store was being raided and the crowd surged there. All windows in the liquor store were smashed and the place emptied of most of its stock of liquor.

The mob then moved back to Charlotte street to the fire scene and when they attempted to set fire to the wagon again a service fire truck turned hoses on them. Sailors rushed the house and in the scuffle windows were broke in a drygoods store.

There was no sign of any large-scale looting and no reports of any serious injuries.

Riots Spread To Sydney And Kentville

SYDNEY, NS, May 8—(CP)—A mob of sailors and civilians raided the George street branch of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission, and late tonight were causing hundreds of dollars damage by smashing plate glass windows along Charlotte street, the city's main street.

City police, RCMP, members of the navy shore patrol and Provost Corps were at the scene but were powerless to stop the outbreak. They appeared to be attempting to keep the mob within one block, where windows were already broken, until the rioting petered out.

Fire on Main Street

The trouble started soon after a fire was lit on the Main street and a group of youthful civilians appeared hauling a delivery wagon. While this was in progress word spread that the liquor store was being raided and the crowd surged there. All windows in the liquor store were smashed and the place emptied of most of its stock of liquor.

The mob then moved back to Charlotte street to the fire scene and when they attempted to set fire to the wagon again a service fire truck turned hoses on them. Sailors rushed the house and in the scuffle windows were broken in a drygoods store.

There was no sign of any large-scale looting and no reports of any serious injuries.

Dispersed by Troops

KENTVILLE, NS, May 8—(CP)—A mob of 1,000 soldiers and civilians tonight raided the liquor store here, smashing out most of the windows and carting out large quantities of liquor before they were dispersed by troops called in hurriedly from nearby Aldershot Camp. The looting came late at night, after early evening V-E Day celebrations of mild nature.

The crowd was calmed down by Maj. Irvine Bickerton, a veteran of the First Great War, who kept them in good humor until the troops arrived.

Proud Wartime Record Of Eastern Port Marred By Orgies On Victory Day

HALIFAX, May 8—(CP)—This has been the biggest, loudest and most expensive party Halifax has ever seen—in fact, few cities have ever seen its equal.

"Victory celebrations" that began last Monday night and burst into full flame today have left the downtown business section virtually ruined—smashed and looted by hundreds of drunken servicemen and civilians.

They ransacked the liquor stores, smashed into a brewery, and then started out on the biggest collective drunk his city ever has seen.

Men and women, by the scores reeled through the streets, carrying cases of beer, cases of whiskey

or rum, or else walked with hands full of bottles.

The parks were turned into virtual beer gardens today, as couples and groups sprawled on the grass with a case of whiskey—an entire year's ration—beside them.

Liquor was dime-a-dozen around the town. Drunken sailors reeled up to you with arms full of bottles, offering to sell it for \$1 or \$2 a quart, or else giving it away outright with a sudden generous impulse.

At the ransacked liquor stores and brewery, men and women fought madly to get in. Even children were in on it, two or three of them seizing a case of beer and rushing off with it.

Scores Injured In Halifax Riots

HALIFAX, May 8—(CP)—The police station here tonight was also a first aid station, a hospital and a Red Cross canteen as scores of people injured in the victory riots were brought in for treatment.

Doctors on duty said it was impossible to estimate the exact number of cases treated, but that at least 60 or 70 stretcher cases were taken from police headquarters to hospitals throughout the city.

The station was a mad scene between eight o'clock and midnight, as drunken and fractious rioters were brought in by city and service police. Most were questioned and identified and allowed to go, because the police cells already were bulging with those detained for further questioning.

Most were suffering cuts and bruises, and others were badly gashed in the hands and legs from punching or kicking out plate glass windows.

Most of the injured were naval ratings, with a sprinkling of soldiers, airmen and civilians.

Halifax Blitzed By Celebrations

HALIFAX, May 8—(CP)—The ravages of nearly six years of war passed Halifax by, but 24 hours of "peace" celebrations have left the city looking as though it had been fought through block by block.

Shattered glass covers the sidewalks and streets of the downtown area.

Clothing store dummies, torn out of window displays in the first orgy of looting, were spread-eagled in grotesque positions around the streets, and dismembered torsos, arms and legs added to the general effect.

Looted and discarded goods were scattered everywhere—thrown aside almost as soon as they were stolen. In front of one fur store a mink coat valued at \$1,000 lay ripped and soiled in the gutter, along with other valuable furs.

Damage Estimated At More Than \$1,000,000 Caused By "Victory" Rioters In NS City

Building Afire and Business Area Is Smashed and Looted

HALIFAX, May 8. — (CP and Special). — Comparative peace settled on Halifax late tonight, and its shocked citizens began counting up the damage caused in today's "victory riots" in which two buildings were set afire and gutted, the entire business section was smashed and looted, and dozens of people were slashed and injured by flying glass.

Curfew Clamped On.

A curfew was clamped on the city at 7 p.m., EDT, and five hours later civilian and service police had quelled the worst of the rioting. Only "sporadic outbreaks" were reported.

There was no official estimate of the damage loss, but it's safe to say it will run \$1,000,000 or more. Scarcely one window stands intact in the town's miles of business section, thousands of dollars' worth of goods and enough liquor and beer to keep several thousand people drunk for hours were looted from the shattered stores.

Believed Incendiary.

Damage in the two fires, believed of incendiary origin, will run to \$100,000 or more. The People's Credit Jewellery store, D'Alaird's women's wear store and the building they were housed in on Barrington street, as well as Fader's pharmacy on Hollis street were gutted.

Deputy Fire Chief Joseph Harber said there was no doubt that both fires, as well as several smaller ones throughout the city during the evening, were of incendiary origin.

Detained by Police.

Two sailors, believed the ring-leaders of the gang that looted the jewelry store and then reportedly set a fire in the basement, were detained by police tonight. No arrests have been made, and no charges have been laid as yet.

Several other looters, civilian and service alike, have been detained for questioning.

Residents said destruction on the main streets was the greatest since the Halifax explosion in 1917 in which thousands of windows were smashed in the same part of the city. However, in that explosion most of north end Halifax buildings were completely wrecked.

Who Will Pay?

Merchants and others affected by the rioting and looting were wondering who would pay for the damage. Much of the smashing was done by sailors who led the raids on the liquor stores and breweries, but civilians joined in the looting with equal enthusiasm.

"Vengeance" Demonstration.

Tonight they were too shocked and too busy boarding up their windows against further depredations to worry about that. Cause of the rioting still puzzled most people, although some sailors asserted it was a "vengeance" or "protest" demonstration for the way the city had treated them.

They said they and their families had been charged high rents for inadequate accommodations in this crowded city — accommodating 120,000 people with space and facilities sufficient for only 70,000 — and had paid high prices for all services.

Vast majority of the servicemen, predominately sailors, were from all parts of Canada. And as any families or friends of servicemen know, living in Halifax or being stationed here has always been one of their chief gripes.

This city during the war has accommodated thousands of sailors, and other servicemen, and there were thousands on the loose last night and today, with nothing to do but celebrate.

Before V-E Day civic authorities had asked the services to provide protection against any possible demonstrations, but as far as could be learned tonight, a service police patrols had been increased but there was no other special form of protection.

Hopelessly Outnumbered.

Both service and civilian police were hopelessly outnumbered by the thousands in the mobs that surged through the streets, mobbing the liquor stores and breweries, and carting away liquor and beer by the case.

Order was not restored until several hours after Mayor Alan M. Butler issued the curfew proclamation, declaring the situation urgent and ordering everyone off the street after 8 o'clock (ADT) under penalty of the "full extent of the law."

Rear Admiral L. W. Murray, officer commanding Canadian Northwest Atlantic, toured the streets in a sound truck, reading the curfew order and ordering naval personnel back to their barracks.

Service police were strengthened by scores of volunteers, and all available trucks were pressed into service to transport the men back to their barracks. There were many spirited struggles up and down the city's streets as fractious rioters were led away to the police station already bulging with battered and drunken inmates.

Dozens of people were cut by flying glass, while a score or more sailors were treated for gashes in their arms and legs from smashing through plate glass windows.

The victory celebrations started last night when a streetcar and a police patrol wagon were burned and three liquor stores rified. Things quieted down about three or four o'clock in the morning, then broke out again with a vengeance early this afternoon.

A mob of some 500 sailors, other servicemen and civilians roamed down Granville street smashing every window, then turned to Water street and the brewery. They stormed in through a cordon of service police and began carting out beer by the case. Some loaded it on trucks they had commandeered somewhere.

Unequaled Scene.

Then began a scene of drunkenness and destruction that is rarely equalled in a city outside a war zone.

Bands of looters roamed up and down Barrington and Hollis streets, kicking in windows or smashing them with clubs of boards they tore off buildings.

It wasn't long before the looting started, first in a shoe store, and then spreading to other stores including the jewelry store which was later fired.

The streets soon were littered with shoes, coats, groceries and articles of a dozen kinds thrown carelessly around.

No streetcars were running, and few automobiles ventured out on the glass-strewn streets.

Late this afternoon, the mayor called a conference between heads of city and Royal Canadian Mounted Police, officials of the three services, civil defence authorities and the attorney-general's department, at which the curfew plan was drawn up.

Naval shore patrols and army provost were being reinforced by volunteers who were coming in steadily to offer their services to quell the riots.

All available officers have been ordered out on the streets, and trucks are touring the city to round up service personnel and return them to barracks.

A number of looters have been picked up and detained, and military police officials say they "are doing everything humanly possible" to bring order out of the chaos and wreckage in Halifax tonight.

Like Wrecked City.

Halifax is like a wrecked city. Within 24 hours of Germany's fall Halifax was blitzed—this famed sprawling port that probably contributed more to Canadian victory than any other city yet never actually was attacked—till last night.

It was an inside, "fifth-column" job. The city's thousands who helped win the war, loaded the merchantmen, spent nights dodging torpedoes in the January Atlantic or step in the mud of Italy let everything go.

Right now there isn't a block in the uptown area that hasn't at least one broken window—dozens are smashed in some blocks, hundreds more are boarded up against a renewed battle tonight.

A section of Hollis street, one of the city's main thoroughfares—is strewn with torn beer cartons rified from the big Nova Scotia Liquor Control Commission, mail-order office and retail store. They won't know for long how much was stolen—the vandals took the files and their loose pages have been blowing around the streets.

Halifax went mad about 11 o'clock last night. It started when hundreds of flags and yards of bunting were ripped from the fronts of hotels, office buildings and homes.

Smash Windows.

Then people found they could smash windows and get away with it, too. Thousands milled around Barrington street and Spring Garden road, well-known Halifax streets corner. Servicemen and civilians stopped a string of trams, jerked their trolleys from the wires and clouted sticks and poles through all their windows. Then they finally set one ablaze.

A big police patrol wagon came to quell the disturbance, but the mob, mounting by the minute, promptly turned it over and put a match to it, also. Nobody seemed to get hurt—seriously, at any rate.

Then the offensive swung to the Sackville street liquor store, last open on Friday. Flagpoles battered in the windows and mobsters ran from the shop with bulging pockets.

But there were other objectives. There are three other liquor houses in the city, and with traditional determination two of them were attacked and ransacked. The merchant navy was in the first offensive wave. After uncounted thousands of dollars of liquor and beer had vanished, they began hurriedly to board up the glassless store fronts.

The mob, still in the thousands, early this morning righted the police car and sent it hurtling down the city's inclines into store facades and posts.

Firemen tried to disperse the crowds with water, but the hoses were cut and hydrants turned off as quickly as they were connected and turned on. Sailors walked down the street wearing homburgs and toting shoes, liquor bottles under their arms—looted from open stores. And so it went—the Battle of Halifax.

Only One Store Front Unbroken In Halifax Area

HALIFAX, May 8.—(CP)—On solitary store front remained unbroken in the city's miles of down town thoroughfares tonight. The window was that of Jack Sutherland's barber shop and the owner of the store, Mrs. Emma MacKay, was responsible for the comparative miracle.

Mrs. MacKay stood in front of the store for 15 long and tire some hours today, diplomatically talking at least a dozen people out of breaking her window.

"This store has been here for 40 years," she said, "and it wasn't even broken in the Halifax explosion in 1917."

A sample of her art of persuasion was the reason she gave three staggering sailors intent on finishing the job of destruction. "There's a dying girl in there," she said. "I'll die in peace, won't you?" In reasonable mood they agreed to move on to another store.

Mrs. MacKay declined to take the credit for herself however spite of her long vigilance.

"It was Divine protection!" she believed.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

- Army -

HQS 8696-1 FD 14 (DAG(B))

THE MINISTER

OTTAWA, 9 May 45

NO 160

SITUATION REPORT ON DISTURBANCES
as of 0930 hrs 9 May 45

The object of this report is to outline briefly some facts in connection with disturbances at Halifax and Dartmouth, Nova Scotia, involving the civilian population, members of the three Armed Services and the Merchant Marine on the 7th and 8th days of May, 45, as reported over the telephone by the DOC MD 6 at 1825 hours 8 May 45.

2. Some time in the evening of 7 May 45 mixed crowds milling about in lower town, Halifax, broke into Sackville Street Liquor Store, took all the liquor and broke windows in the vicinity. No other looting was reported at that time.

3. At 1430 hours 8 May 45 when a VE Day parade was being held the Mayor of Halifax came to see the DOC MD 6 and stated that crowds had broken into a brewery and some other liquor stores in Halifax and that he needed assistance. A conference was immediately held which the heads of the three Services and the RCMP attended. It was decided to end the program and complete the parade as early as possible. Further reports were received that liquor stores and other places of business were being broken into and looted. The crowd was out of hand.

4. At 1630 hours 8 May 45 the Mayor called a meeting at which the Attorney-General of Nova Scotia, his legal advisers, several aldermen, the Civilian Committee for V-Day, the heads of the Armed Services, the RCMP and the Chief of Police of Halifax attended.

5. Following this meeting the Mayor issued a proclamation that all persons should withdraw from the streets and that service personnel should return to their barracks or billets. The DOC MD 6 sent all available army officers into the streets to order army personnel back to barracks or billets. He detailed available personnel to assist the Provost Corps in their duties. The Navy authorities did the same sort of thing and a senior officer went through the streets in a broadcasting truck with the Chief of Police and others directing naval personnel back to their barracks and warning them that anyone out after 2000 hours would be severely dealt with. The Mayor embodied this same message in his proclamation.

6. The plan as agreed upon by the Mayor and the heads of the Services was to clear the streets of civilians and service personnel.

7. To take care of further contingencies 1000 military personnel have been moved to a point near

Halifax.

8. The disturbance has spread to the adjoining community of Dartmouth where a liquor store has been looted, and rioting took place there as well as in Halifax.

9. Arrangements have been made to call out troops in aid of the civil power if required by the Attorney-General of the Province of Nova Scotia but so far no requisition to that effect has been made.

10. Arrangements have been made to supplement the Provost at Halifax temporarily, and the situation has improved considerably.

11. A further report will be made when more information is available.

G. A. Walford
Brig
(A.E. Walford)
Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION:

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General	(1)
The Minister, Naval Services	(1)
Minister of National War Services	(1)
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister	(1)
Private Secy to the Prime Minister	(1)
Clerk of the Privy Council	(1)
CGS	(1)
AG	(1)
DPR (Army)	(2)
The Commissioner, R.C.M.P.	(3)
Director of Censorship	(1)
	(1)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

- Army -

HQS 8696-1 FD 14 (DAG(B))

THE MINISTER

OTTAWA, 9 May 45

NO 160

SITUATION REPORT ON DISTURBANCES
as of 0930 hrs 9 May 45

The object of this report is to outline briefly some facts in connection with disturbances at Halifax and Dartmouth, Nova Scotia, involving the civilian population, members of the three Armed Services and the Merchant Marine on the 7th and 8th days of May, 45, as reported over the telephone by the DOC MD 6 at 1825 hours 8 May 45.

2. Some time in the evening of 7 May 45 mixed crowds milling about in lower town, Halifax, broke into Sackville Street Liquor Store, took all the liquor and broke windows in the vicinity. No other looting was reported at that time.

3. At 1430 hours 8 May 45 when a VE Day parade was being held the Mayor of Halifax came to see the DOC MD 6 and stated that crowds had broken into a brewery and some other liquor stores in Halifax and that he needed assistance. A conference was immediately held which the heads of the three Services and the RCMP attended. It was decided to end the program and complete the parade as early as possible. Further reports were received that liquor stores and other places of business were being broken into and looted. The crowd was out of hand.

4. At 1630 hours 8 May 45 the Mayor called a meeting at which the Attorney-General of Nova Scotia, his legal advisers, several aldermen, the Civilian Committee for V-Day, the heads of the Armed Services, the RCMP and the Chief of Police of Halifax attended.

5. Following this meeting the Mayor issued a proclamation that all persons should withdraw from the streets and that service personnel should return to their barracks or billets. The DOC MD 6 sent all available army officers into the streets to order army personnel back to barracks or billets. He detailed available personnel to assist the Provost Corps in their duties. The Navy authorities did the same sort of thing and a senior officer went through the streets in a broadcasting truck with the Chief of Police and others directing naval personnel back to their barracks and warning them that anyone out after 2000 hours would be severely dealt with. The Mayor embodied this same message in his proclamation.

6. The plan as agreed upon by the Mayor and the heads of the Services was to clear the streets of civilians and service personnel.

7. To take care of further contingencies 1000 military personnel have been moved to a point near

12

Halifax.

8. The disturbance has spread to the adjoining community of Dartmouth where a liquor store has been looted, and rioting took place there as well as in Halifax.

9. Arrangements have been made to call out troops in aid of the civil power if required by the Attorney-General of the Province of Nova Scotia but so far no requisition to that effect has been made.

10. Arrangements have been made to supplement the Provost at Halifax temporarily, and the situation has improved considerably.

11. A further report will be made when more information is available.

G. A. Ferguson
Brig
(A. E. Walford)
Major-General
Adjutant-General

DISTRIBUTION:

Secy to His Excellency the Governor General
The Minister, Naval Services
Minister of National War Services
Military Staff Officer to the Prime Minister
Private Secy to the Prime Minister
Clerk of the Privy Council
CGS
AG
DPR (Army)
The Commissioner, R.C.M.P.
Director of Censorship

(1)
(1)
(1)
(1)
(1)
(1)
(1)
(2)
(3)
(1)
(1)

ALL CORRESPONDENCE TO BE
ADDRESSED:—

THE COMMISSIONER.

R. C. M. POLICE.

OTTAWA

ROYAL CANADIAN MOUNTED POLICE
HEADQUARTERS

IN REPLY PLEASE QUOTE

FILE NO. 45D 1282-2-B 271 & 272

OTTAWA, May 4, 1945.

CANADA

Re: Archibald TORRANCE and Norman C.
COLLINS, Halifax, N.S., Common
Assault.

Attached, for your information, is a copy of our complete file concerning the prosecution of the two above named men for assaulting a member of #37 Provost Corps at Halifax. You will note that the accused each entered a plea of guilty to this charge and they were each fined \$10.00 and costs. The fines and costs were paid forthwith.

J. H. Reynolds
for Commissioner.

TO: The Deputy Minister,
Department of National Defence, (Army),
OTTAWA.

Encl.

SUBJECTS

File

Chgd. to

Referred to

/3

"H" DIV. FILE: 45 H 1282-131
I.S. - C.I.B.

COMM. - OTTAWA.

RE: Norman C. COLLINS -
s.s. "Letitia" -
Assault
(Asst. to 37 Provost Corps).

FORWARDED - together with F.264B.
covering conviction registered against subject.

2. As will be noted assistance was rendered the Provost Corps following an assault on their gangway guard to the hospital ship s.s. "Letitia". This file should be read in conjunction with our file 45 H 1282-132, Re: Archibald TORRANCE, Halifax, N. S.

3. Since both subjects involved have been convicted and no further assistance requested in this connection, our file is now being concluded.

CONCLUDED - CONVICTED.

Halifax, N. S.,
27-4-45,
I.2/D
Encs.

S/Insp.,
(R. F. KARROW)
FOR O.C. "H" DIVISION.

ROYAL CANADIAN MOUNTED POLICE

Document disclosed under the Access to Information Act -
Document divulgué en vertu de la Loi sur l'accès à l'information

DIVISION FILE No. 45-H-1200-131
SUB-DIVISION DETACHMENT

DIVISION "H" Headquarters Intell. Sect. - C.I.B.
PROVINCE Nova Scotia DATE 23-4-45

RE: Norman Campbell COLLINS - S.S. Letitia. (Hospital Ship)
Assault, Sec. 291, C.C.C. (Assistance to 37 Provost Corps).

HEADQUARTERS

SUB-DIVISION

DETACHMENT

P.C.R.

A. R. V. No.

DIARY DATE

SET FOR.....

1. With reference to the above, I beg to report that on the 17-4-45 Capt. Conway of 37 Provost Corps called at this Section and requested the writer to assist him in an investigation regarding unauthorized persons boarding the S.S. Letitia the evening of the 16-4-45 at Pier 20 National Harbours Board.

2. The Provost Guards on duty from 4p.m. to 12 m.n. of the 16-4-45 were L/Cpl. Smith and L/Cpl. Paradis and they were at the shore end of the covered gangway of the Letitia. At about 9.30p.m. two crew members of the Letitia returned to the ship in an intoxicated condition and were asked to show their Ship's Crew Passes. Norman C. COLLINS was the first requested to show his pass and he showed a Ship's Crew Pass #10380 dated to expire on the 10-4-45. He refused to show his pass for the present trip of this ship to this Port and the Provost Guard, L/Cpl. Paradis tried to prevent him going aboard and during this effort to detain him he struck Paradis in the face with his fist.

3. While this scuffle was going on between the Provost and COLLINS his partner Archibald TORRANCE kicked L/Cpl. Smith in the groin. By this time about six more crew members had returned to the ship and they started shoving and yelling at the Provost in order to cause a disturbance and allow COLLINS and TORRANCE to get aboard the ship. This happened as planned and Capt. Conway went aboard ship in the late p.m. and had this TORRANCE identified as the one who had kicked L/Cpl. Smith.

4. TORRANCE was taken to the Halifax City Police lock-up and booked on an assault charge. Capt. Conway asked to have his case held up in order to have the information laid but due to an oversight he was allowed his freedom when no witnesses appeared. This was in the a.m. of the 17-4-45.

5. Up to this time COLLINS had not been identified and the writer questioned all those who had been in the vicinity at the time of the scuffle and it was eventually learned that COLLINS was the one who had caused the trouble by showing this out-dated pass. The Provost identified COLLINS and after discussing the matter with Capt. Conway it was suggested that both COLLINS and TORRANCE be charged with Assault.

6. This was done on the 19-4-45 and warrants issued to the City Police for the arrest of these two men. On the 20-4-45 both these men appeared before Magistrate Inglis and plead GUILTY. Both were fined \$10.00 and ordered to pay costs of \$2.25, each. Fine and costs paid forthwith.

7. During the course of this enquiry it was learned that both COLLINS and TORRANCE had brought beer aboard ship the night of the 16-4-45 and this was brought to the

000306

CONT'D.

(to the) attention of the Master of the ship and both these men were "logged" for this disregard of the regulations.

8. As a result of this investigation it was found that no unauthorized persons had boarded this ship during the scuffle between the crew members and the Provost Guard, as was first feared by the Capt. Conway of the Provost.

9. During the enquiry it was learned that many of these crew members retain these Ship's Crew Passes even after they are out-dated and in this way are able to get crew members of other ships aboard to visit by having them flash these old passes when they pass the guards.

10. The trouble the night of the 16-4-45 was as a result of this man COLLINS having this old pass in his possession and being intoxicated enough to think that he had the right one or that by showing the old one there was no need for him to show his good one.

11. COLLINS was relieved of this old pass and warned that in the future he must surrender this when leaving the Port of Halifax as is shown in the instructions on the reverse side. It is apparent that the heads of the different departments on board this ship the Letitia are not collecting the old passes and this was brought to the attention of the Chief Officer.

12. Attached hereto is Ship's Crew Pass #10380 for return to the Security Control.

D.O.C., M.D. No. 6, Halifax, N. S.
Attn: D. A. P. M.

J.G. Skinner
.....Cst.
J.G. Skinner, 13131.

FORWARDED - for your information
together with F. 264B. covering
conviction obtained in this connection.

Halifax, N. S.,
27-4-45,
I.2/D
Encs.

Inspector,
FOR O.C. "H" DIVISION, A.O.D.

S.C.O., Port of Halifax, c/o RCMP, Halifax.
FORWARDED - together with ship's crew Pass No. 10380 for disposition.
F. 264B. is forwarded herewith covering conviction entered in this case.

Halifax, N. S.,
27-4-45,
I.2/D
Encs.

S/Inspr.,
(R. F. KARROW)
FOR O.C. "H" DIVISION.

H.Q. File No.

ROYAL CANADIAN MOUNTED POLICE

S. Div. Ref.

R.C.
Num

Sub-Div.

Intell. SECT.- C.I.B.

Det. Ref.

A.R.V. No.

Dadant

Norman Campbell COLLINS

Address Glasgow, Scotland.

Occupation

Fireman- S.S.Letitia

Status in Canada

Crew member - SS Letitia

Nationality

Scottish

Colour

white

Date of Birth

Dec. 13th, 1912

Place of Offence

National Harbours Board, Halifax, N.S.

Date

16-4-45

Offence

Common Assault

C.C. of C.

Sec. 291

(DESCRIPTION)

(NAME OF ACT)

(SECTION)

Information

L/Cpl. Paradis

19-4-45

City Clerk

Halifax, N.S.

(BY WHOM LAID)

(DATE)

(BEFORE)

(PLACE)

Arrest or

Arrest

Date

19-4-45

Place

Halifax, N.S.

Date 20-4-45

Summons

Tried by

Magistrate R.E. Inglis

Plea GUILTY

Prosecutor or

Pros'g Counsel

Capt. Conway

Defence

Counsel

nil

Disposition of Charge or

Sentence imposed and date

plea of GUILTY - fined \$10.00 and ordered to pay costs of \$2.25

Fine paid or gaol term taken

Fine and costs paid forthwith.

Costs Collected (Police)

Authority for Search

#37 Provost Corps.

Serving Summons

\$

Complainant

Arrest

\$

Fingerprints to H. Q.

(DATE)

Attending Court

\$

Photographs to H.Q.

(DATE)

Business Fees

\$

Last previous conviction (quote

F.P.S. Number if known)

nil

Mileage

Miles @

c.p.m. \$

Costs other than R.C.M.P.:

Remarks:

Magistrate- Halifax City Police \$2.25

ASSISTANCE TO ARMY (37 Provost).

1. At about 9.30p.m. of the 16-4-45 this fireman together with Archibald TORRANCE of the S.S.Letitia berthed at Pier 20 returned to the ship and attempted to go aboard. COLLINS showed the Provost Guard on the gangway an expired N.H.B.Ship's Crew Pass No.10380 which he had received the last time this ship was here and had not turned in. The Provost (L/Cpl.Paradis) refused to let him pass and as a result a scuffle took place and COLLINS struck L/Cpl.Paradis in the face with his fist.

2. It was felt by the Army (37 Provost) that the crew members of the Letitia had apparently tried to get friends aboard this ship without the proper pass and had started a scuffle in order to allow them to slip aboard. In view of this suspected breach of Security Regulations the writer assisted Capt. Conway of 37 Provost Corps in investigating this matter.

3. Statements were taken from TORRANCE and COLLINS and it was apparent that it was only a case of refusing to show their proper passes that caused this trouble.

Diary Date

Investigated by

Cat. Skinner. - (Capt. Conway.)

Fw'd on

to O.C.S.-Div.

Fw'd on

23-4-45

to O.C. Div.

Fw'd Comm'r

I/C DETACHMENT

I/C SUB-DIVISION

COMMANDING DIVISION

"H"
1 DIV. FILE: 45 H 1282-132
S. - C.I.B.

D.O.C., M.D. No. 6, Halifax, N. S.

ATTN: D. A. P. M.

RE: Archibald TORRANCE - Halifax, N. S.

Copy of our F.264E, which is self-explanatory
is forwarded for your information and record.

2. Details leading up to the conviction of this
subject will be found in our co-file 45 H 1282-131, Norman
Campbell COLLINS - s.s. "Letitia" (Hospital Ship) - Assault,
Sec. 291, C.C.C. (Asst. to 37 Provost Corps), presently being
forwarded you.

Halifax, N. S.,
27-4-45,
I.2/D
Enc.

Insp.,
for O.C. "H" Division, A.O.D.

S.C.O., Port of Halifax, c/o RCMP, Halifax.

FORWARDED - for your information and record.

Halifax, N. S.,
27-4-45,
I.2/D
Enc.

S/Insp.,
(R. F. KARROW)
FOR O.C. "H" DIVISION.

COMMR. - OTTAWA.

FORWARDED. Please refer to our file No. 45 H 1282-131,
Norman Campbell Collins - s.s. "Letitia" (Hospital Ship)
Assault, Sec. 291, C.C.C. (Asst. to 37 Provost Corps), for
details of this case.
CONCLUDED - CONVICTED.

Halifax, N. S.,
27-4-45,
I.2/D
Encs.

(R. F. KARROW)
FOR O.C. "H"

ROYAL CANADIAN MOUNTED POLICE

R.C.M.P. Seizure
Number

Sub-Division.....INTELL. SECT.-C.I.B. S. Div. Ref.....
Detachment..... Archibald TORRANCE Det. Ref..... A.R.V. No.....
Defendant..... Archibald TORRANCE Address..... Glasgow, Scotland.
Occupation..... Stewards Dept. (NAME IN FULL) Crew member S.S. Letitia
Nationality..... Scottish Colour..... white Date of Birth..... Sept. 28th, 190
Place of Offence..... National Harbours Board, Halifax, N.S. Date..... 16-4-45
Offence..... Common Assault C.C. of C. Sec. 291
Information..... L/Cpl. Smith 19-4-45 City Clerk Halifax, N.S.
Arrest or Summons..... Arrest (BY WHOM LAID) (DATE) Place of Trial (BEFORE) (PLACE)
Date..... 19-4-45 Date..... 20-4-45
Tried by..... Magistrate R.E. Inglis Plea..... GUILTY
Prosecutor or Pros'g Counsel..... Capt. Conway Defence Counsel..... nil
Disposition of Charge or Sentence imposed and date..... plea of GUILTY - fined \$10.00 and ordered to pay costs of \$2.25

Fine paid or gaol term taken..... Fine paid- costs paid, forthwith.

Costs Collected (Police)

Authority for Search.....

Serving Summons..... \$

Complainant: #37 Provost Corps.

Arrest..... \$

Fingerprints to H. Q. (DATE)

Attending Court..... \$

Photographs to H.Q. (DATE)

Witness Fees..... \$

Last previous conviction (quote F.P.S. Number if known) nil

Mileage..... Miles @..... c.p.m. \$

Costs other than R.C.M.P.:

Magistrate - Halifax City Police \$2.25

Remarks:

ASSISTANCE TO ARMY (37 Provost)

1. At about 9.30p.m. of the 16-4-45 this man together with COLLINS returned to the S.S. Letitia in a slightly intoxicated condition. COLLINS started aboard ship but his pass was out-dated that he the Provost Guard refused to let him pass. TORRANCE when he kicked L/Cpl. Smith in the groin and a scuffle ensued.

2. It was felt by the Provost that these crew members and the others who were shoving and yelling had caused this trouble for their friends from other ships to slip aboard. In view of the apparent attempt at contravening the Security Regulations Capt. of 37 Provost requested the writer to assist in this enquiry.

3. After questioning TORRANCE and COLLINS it was apparent that these men were intoxicated and when COLLINS showed the out-dated pass would not show his present one it was the signal for a scuffle. The chance to show their resentment of the Provost checking them in Port.

Diary Date.....

Investigated by..... Cst. Skinner - (Capt)

Fw'd on..... to O.C.S.-Div. (DATE)

Fw'd on..... 23-4-45 to O.C. Div. (DATE)

I/C DETACHMENT

I/C SUB-DIVISION

BEST COPY AVAILABLE

M E M O R A N D U M

TO: Parliamentary Assistant
through Deputy Minister
(Army)

Department of National Defence

H.Q. 54-27-63-7 S.E.906
Adm. 3(c)SC(A)
OTTAWA,

14 Jun 44

ARTICLES IN DAILY STAR - HALIFAX
Complaint about Provost Corps in
M.D. 6

On 31 May 44 an editorial appeared in the Halifax Daily Star headed "A Job For The Service Police" which appears at Flag "A".

2. On 3 Jun 44 a further editorial appeared in the same newspaper headed "Disgraceful Conduct" appearing at Flag "B".

3. 7 Jun 44 upon instructions from the G.O.C.-in-C., Atlantic Command a meeting was convened of the Joint Service Committee consisting of -

G.O.C.-in-C., Atlantic Command
Commander-in-Chief, Canadian Northwest Atlantic
A.O.C.-in-C., Eastern Air Command
D.O.C., M.D. No. 6

with reference to the above subject.

4. 9 Jun 44 a further meeting was convened. Those present being -

Rear Admiral L.W. Murray, Commander-in-Chief,
Cdn. Northwest Atlantic
Air Vice Marshal G.O. Johnson, A.O.C.-in-C.,
Eastern Air Command
Brigadier D.A. White, D.O.C., M.D. No. 6.
His Worship J.E. Lloyd, Mayor of Halifax
John MacDonald, Esq., representing the Attorney
General of Nova Scotia.
Two other R.C.A.F. officers.

5. It was learned that due to local conditions personnel caused more trouble than personnel from two Services. The Services arranged to improve schooling and communication between the various Service Headquarters. The general opinion was that the situation has not been bad and that there has been less trouble than anticipated due to conditions. Close liaison between the three Services, the City and the Provost Authority is anticipated, improve the situation.

6. There has been no Public Relations Officer at Headquarters, M.D. No. 6 since 30 Apr 44 and that this is a handicap in dealing with the press.

7. According to a letter of D.A.P.M. dated 6 Jun 44, Mr. C.F. Fraser, Managing Editor of Daily Star, stated on interview that he did not think the Provost Corps in M.D. No. 6 was lax or ineffectual. He had not made any effort to contact the Provost Corps prior to publication of his newspaper article.

A.G. ENQUIRY *Final* REPORT

NO. 906(N) PASSED *h/r*

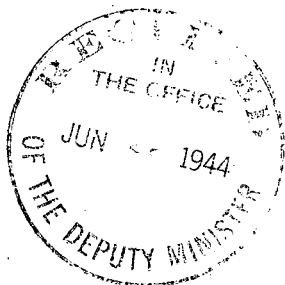
DATE 15 Jun 44 *h*

000311

M E M O R A N D

H.Q.

June 22, 1944.



D.M. (C)

P.R.O. M.D. 6

1. Reference your minute re para 6, one folio down.
2. Capt. A.C. Ballantine proceeded to M.D. 6 "On Command" June 18/44.
3. D.P.R. (A) experienced much difficulty in placing an officer as P.R.O. to this District, due to the fact that no provision has been made on the District Establishment for a P.R.O. P.R.O. originally was posted to M.D. 6 on Ministerial authority. Since then two officers covering the appointment have been sent overseas, first Capt. D.K.S. Maclellan and last Lt. R.H. Haviland.
4. At the time Lt. Haviland left, seven other P.R.O.'s were despatched o/s and the Directorate generally was left short of officers. The Sixth Victory Loan Campaign was in progress and P.R.O. M.D. 1 was acting Liaison Officer to National War Finance Committee. He was being replaced by Capt. Ballantine.
5. Capt. Ballantine does not belong to D.P.R. but is an experienced newspaperman, having served 20 years or so on several Western daily newspapers and was editor of the Calgary Albertan when he joined the V.G. of C. in 1940. He recently became a surplus officer, posted to M.D. 13 for disposal.
6. Following Lt. Haviland's departure we wired D.P.R. suggesting Capt. Ballantine be given a trial as his P.R.O. He concurred and application was made to Pers. for attachment to M.D. 6 for trial as P.R.O. This was from Pers. as there appeared to be no authority. Pers. subsequently arranged for Capt. Ballantine "on command".

*Ward
27/6/44*

F.X. Jennin
F.X. Jennin
Director of

000312

Parliamentary Assistant
through Deputy Minister
(Army)



64-27-83-7
Adm. 3(c)30(A)

S.E.906

14 Jun 44

ARTICLES IN DAILY STAR - HALIFAX
Complaint about Provost Corps in
M.D. 6

On 31 May 44 an editorial appeared in the Halifax Daily Star headed "A Job For The Service Police" which appears at Page "A".

On 3 Jun 44 a further editorial appeared in the same newspaper headed "Disgraceful Conduct" appearing at Page "B".

On 7 Jun 44 upon instructions from the C.O.C.-in-Atlantic Command a meeting was convened of the Joint Committee consisting of -

C.O.C.-in-C., Atlantic Command
Commander-in-Chief, Canadian Northwest Atlantic
C.O.C.-in-C., Eastern Air Command
M.D. No. 6

the above subject.

a further meeting was convened. Those

Admiral L.W. Murray, Commander-in-Chief,
Cdn. Northwest Atlantic
Air Vice Marshal C.O. Johnson, A.O.C.-in-C.,
Eastern Air Command
Brigadier D.A. White, D.O.C., M.D. No. 6.
His Worship J.B. Lloyd, Mayor of Halifax
John MacDonald, Esq., representing the Attorney
General of Nova Scotia.
Two other R.C.A.F. officers.

It was learned that due to local conditions, naval personnel caused more trouble than personnel from the other two Services. The Services arranged to improve street patrolling and communication between the various Services and Police Headquarters. The general opinion was that the situation has not been bad and that there has been less trouble than might be anticipated due to conditions. Close liaison between the three Services, the City and the Provost Authorities will, it is anticipated, improve the situation.

There has been no Public Relations Officer at Headquarters, M.D. No. 6 since 30 Apr 44 and the D.O.C. feels that this is a handicap in dealing with the Press.

According to a letter of D.A.P.M., M.D. No. 6 dated 6 Jun 44, Mr. C.F. Fraser, Managing Editor of the Halifax Daily Star, stated on interview that he did not think that the Provost Corps in M.D. No. 6 was lax or inefficient and that he had not made any effort to contact the D.O.C. or the D.A.P.M. prior to publication of his newspaper articles.

DPK
Your comments
are. See para 6
Murray
DM
14/6/44

BR:CK

Murray
(H.E.G. Logan)
Major-General
Adjutant-General

000313

H.Q. 54-27-63-7 VOL:2

875M-12-43 (3045)
H.Q. 1772-39-440

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE-(ARMY)

CROSS REFERENCE

DISTURBANCES M.D. NO.6

CANADIAN ACTIVE SERVICE FORCES

DEAD

DEAD

CENTRAL REGISTRY	DATE	P. A. OR B. F.	INITIALS	REFERRED TO	FOR REMARKS	INITIALS	DATE
(If purpose for which referred cannot be expressed on one line, add minute to file, and enter here "With Minute")							
OCT 4 1945	10/10/45			Admin	PASSED		10/10/45
OCT 11 1945				Admin			15/10/45
OCT 16 1945				Major Elwood			16/10/45
OCT 25 1945				Admin			23/10/45
NOV 1 1945				J.A.G.			25/10/45
NOV 15 1945				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 15 1945		
NOV 25 1945				D. Adm.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
DEC 1 1945				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
DEC 15 1945				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
DEC 21 1945				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
DEC 25 1945				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
JAN 1 1946				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
JAN 15 1946				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
JAN 21 1946				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
FEB 7 1946				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
FEB 9 1946				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
FEB 12 1946				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
FEB 15 1946				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
MAR 21 1946				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		
JUL 3 1946				J.A.G.	PER B.F. NOV 25 1945		

DO NOT WRITE BELOW THIS LINE

000314

FALSE DOCKETS

[illegible]